THE DISCOVERY

OF

THE SOLOMON ISLANDS

BY

ALVARO DE MENDAÑA

IN 1568.

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL SPANISH MANUSCRIPTS.

Edited, with Introduction and Notes,

BY

LORD AMHERST OF HACKNEY,

AND

BASIL THOMSON.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR THE HAKLUYT SOCIETY.

M.DCCCCI.

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

PAGE

V. A Brief Account of what occurred upon the Voyage of ALVARO DE MENDAÑA in quest of New Guinea. (The Anonymous Manuscript) . . . 193

VI. An Account of the Voyage and Discovery which was made in the South Sea under the command of ALVARO DE MENDAÑA as General, drawn up by GOMEZ H^{RES} CATOIRA, Chief Purser, Custodian of Objects for Barter, and Comptroller for His Majesty . . 215

VII. A Very Particular Account given to Captain FRANCISCO DE CADRES by an Indian named CHEPO; followed by a Strange Account of a Ship which was driven to an Island in Latitude 18 degrees, along which she cruised for fifty days without finding the end of it . . 465

INDEX 471

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

Native of Ulawa (La Treguada) . . . *Frontispiece*

Facsimile of the first page of Gomez Catoira's Manuscript . 216

Facsimile of the Original of page 218 . . . 218

A Tomb (with Native wearing a Sunshade) . . . 248

A Tomb—A House in the Gela (Florida) Group, with door barricaded 290

Weapons and Implements 316

Native of Lango (Nalimbiu River, Guadalcanar) . - 330

A Family in Marau Sound 340

Native of New Georgia, with inlaid earring . . . 352

Man of Ulawa Island 356

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

PAGE
Chiefs of Marau Sound . . . 368
Natives of Aola (Urare), with Alligator . . . 372
War Canoe (Guadalcanar) 376
Trading Canoes leaving Guadalcanar . . . 384
Canoe House, Santa Ana 406
Small Canoe (Guadalcanar) 414

MAPS.

1. Chart of the Pacific Ocean, showing the course followed by Mendaña's Ships, 1567-1569 . *In pocket at the end*
2. The Solomon Islands, showing the explorations of the Ships and of the Brigantine, 1568 . *In pocket at the end*

THE DISCOVERY

OF

THE SOLOMON ISLANDS

BY

ALVARO DE MENDAÑA

IN 1568.

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL SPANISH MANUSCRIPTS.

Edited, with Introduction and Notes,

BY

LORD AMHERST OF HACKNEY,

AND

BASIL THOMSON.

VOL. II.

LONDON
PRINTED FOR THE HAKLUYT SOCIETY.

M.DCCCCI.

WORKS ISSUED BY

The Hakluyt Society.

THE DISCOVERY

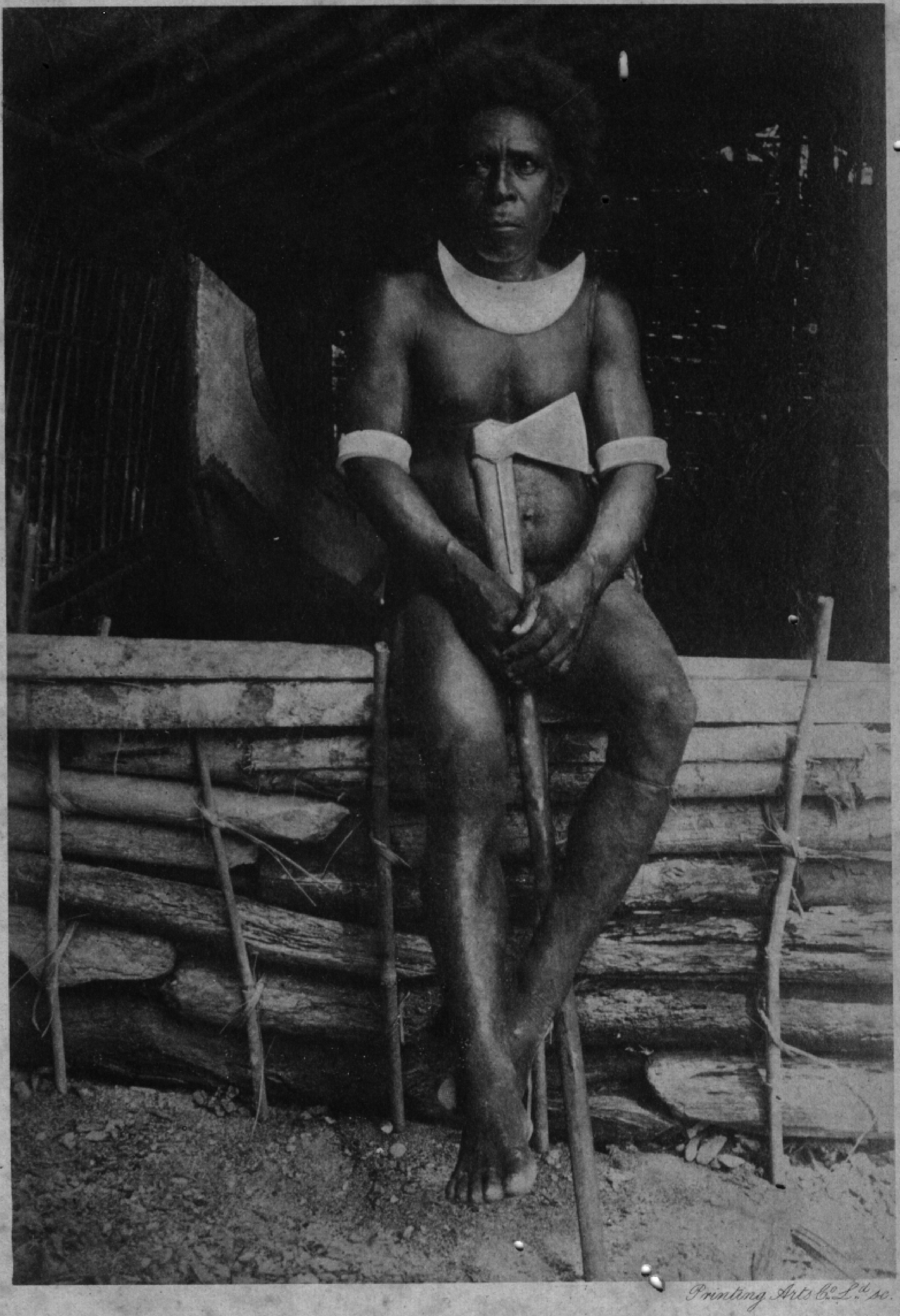
OF

THE SOLOMON ISLANDS.

VOL. II.

SECOND SERIES.

No. VIII.



Printing Arts Co. Ld. sc.

Native of Ulawa. (La Treguada.)

THE DISCOVERY

OF

THE SOLOMON ISLANDS

BY

ALVARO DE MENDAÑA

IN 1568.

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL SPANISH MANUSCRIPTS.

Edited, with Introduction and Notes,

BY

LORD AMHERST OF HACKNEY,

AND

BASIL THOMSON.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR THE HAKLUYT SOCIETY.

M.DCCCCI.

IMPERIAL LIBRARY
17 APR. 02

LONDON:
PRINTED AT THE BEDFORD PRESS, 20 AND 21, BEDFORDBURY, W.C.

COUNCIL

OF

THE HAKLUYT SOCIETY.

Sir Clements Markham, K.C.B., F.R.S., *Pres. R.G.S.*, President.
The Right Hon. The Lord Stanley of Alderley, Vice-President.
Rear-Admiral Sir William Wharton, K.C.B., Vice-President.
Commr. B. M. Chambers, R.N.
C. Raymond Beazley, M.A.
Colonel G. Earl Church.
Sir W. Martin Conway.
F. H. H. Guillemard, M.A., M.D.
Edward Heawood, M.A.
Dudley F. A. Hervey, C.M.G.
E. F. Im Thurn, C.B., C.M.G.
J. Scott Keltie, LL.D.
F. W. Lucas.
A. P. Maudslay.
E. J. Payne, M.A.
Howard Saunders.
H. W. Trinder.
Charles Welch, F.S.A.

William Foster, B.A., *Honorary Secretary.*

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

PAGE

V. A Brief Account of what occurred upon the Voyage of ALVARO DE MENDAÑA in quest of New Guinea. (The Anonymous Manuscript) . . . 193

VI. An Account of the Voyage and Discovery which was made in the South Sea under the command of ALVARO DE MENDAÑA as General, drawn up by GOMEZ H$^{\text{RES}}$ CATOIRA, Chief Purser, Custodian of Objects for Barter, and Comptroller for His Majesty . . 215

VII. A Very Particular Account given to Captain FRANCISCO DE CADRES by an Indian named CHEPO; followed by a Strange Account of a Ship which was driven to an Island in Latitude 18 degrees, along which she cruised for fifty days without finding the end of it . . 465

INDEX 471

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

Native of Ulawa (La Treguada) . . . *Frontispiece*

Facsimile of the first page of Gomez Catoira's Manuscript . 216

Facsimile of the Original of page 218 . . . 218

A Tomb (with Native wearing a Sunshade) . . . 248

A Tomb—A House in the Gela (Florida) Group, with door barricaded 290

Weapons and Implements 316

Native of Lango (Nalimbiu River, Guadalcanar) . - 330

A Family in Marau Sound 340

Native of New Georgia, with inlaid earring . . . 352

Man of Ulawa Island 356

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

PAGE
Chiefs of Marau Sound . . . 368
Natives of Aola (Urare), with Alligator . . . 372
War Canoe (Guadalcanar) 376
Trading Canoes leaving Guadalcanar . . . 384
Canoe House, Santa Ana 406
Small Canoe (Guadalcanar) 414

MAPS.

1. Chart of the Pacific Ocean, showing the course followed by Mendaña's Ships, 1567-1569 . *In pocket at the end*
2. The Solomon Islands, showing the explorations of the Ships and of the Brigantine, 1568 . *In pocket at the end*

A BRIEF ACCOUNT

of what occurred upon the

Voyage of Alvaro de Mendaña

in quest of

New Guinea,

Which had already been discovered by INIGO ORTEZ
DE RETES, who sailed with VILLALOBOS from
the land of NEW SPAIN in the
year 1541.[1]

---

[1] This MS. is No. N 325 in the Bibliothèque Nationale in Paris. A French translation was published by Edouard Charton in 1854 (*Voyageurs Anciens et Modernes*, Paris; vol. iv, p. 187). It appears to have been written by one of the soldiers who accompanied Ortega in the first voyage of the brigantine, and who returned in the *Capitana*.

AN

ANONYMOUS NARRATIVE.

IN the year 1567, by order of the Licentiate Lope Garcia de Castro of His Majesty's Council, Governor of Los Reyes in Peru, and President of the Supreme Court of Los Reyes, two ships of medium burden were fitted out, and there embarked in them one hundred and twenty men, half of whom were mariners and seamen, and the other half soldiers, without counting the servants and galley-slaves, and four pilots, of whom the chief was named Hernan Gallego. The General of this fleet was Alvaro de Mendaña, nephew of the President, a young man of twenty-five; the Master of the Camp and Admiral was Pedro de Ortega Valenciano, Chief Constable (*Alguazil-Mayor*) of Panama, and a native of Guadalcanal; we also had with us four friars of the Order of St. Francis.

We left the port of Callao de Lima, and of the City of Los Reyes, on Wednesday, the feast of Santa Ysabel, on the 19th of November, 1567, and plied to windward for the rest of the afternoon and part of the night, and the next day we put out to sea with fresh winds, and navigated for ten days, until we reached the latitude of 15½ degrees, and then we navigated for a few days with east winds, a few showers, and a calm sea.

When we were about 500 leagues from the coast of Peru we saw a great quantity of birds, but after three days we saw them no more. Here we took the sun, and found that we were 8 degrees south of the equator; and we believed ourselves to be 900 leagues from the coast of Peru. We again saw quantities of birds, and navigating in the latitude of 7 degrees full, we sighted land, which was a small island. As we approached it, seven canoes of Indians came out, but they would not come near enough for us to find out whether they were negroes or Indians, and the canoes having gone further off, returned to shore, where they displayed many flags, and lighted fires during the night. The next morning we had a storm of wind and rain, which, with the numerous currents, obliged us to go forward without touching at the island, to which we gave the name of the "Island of Jesus."

On the 1st of February we discovered certain reefs, and, going forward with great difficulty because of the storms and showers, we saw quantities of grass, sticks, and several oranges, such as are discharged by rivers, and the next day, the 7th of February, we discovered very high land, which could be seen 15 leagues off. We reached it on a Sunday, when there came out to meet us many canoes, in which were more than one hundred Indians; but they would not approach, although we gave them a few trifles which are used for barter, but to no purpose; and thereupon we launched the boat to go and discover a port, and we plied to windward that night, with great danger to the ships until the next day, for this coast is full of shoals.

On Monday morning, the 9th of February, we discovered a port, which we entered, and we gave it the name of "Puerto de la Estrella," because we saw a star at noon when we entered the port. We called the island "Santa

Ysabel," because we left the port of Callao on that Saint's day, and the General had promised that the first land which we discovered should be named thus. This island is inhabited by naked Indians, who wear nothing but a covering of palm leaves ; it is their custom to dye their hair a fair colour and curl it ; we saw no kind of metal, but they wear bracelets of shell, and plates of the same round their necks. There is no kind of grain for food, but there are roots, cocoa-nuts, and other things to be hereafter mentioned : it is a mountainous and thickly-wooded country. Here there came to us an Indian chief, whose name was Tauriqui Biliban Harri. In order to show his friendship he asked the General to change names with him, so that he might be called Alvaro de Mendaña, and the General Tauriqui Biliban Harri. The General gave him some of our food, and we played for him a guitar and other instruments which we had with us, such as a small trumpet and a drum. The chief, in return, sent for his music, which was a conch and some reeds tied together, with which they make a certain musical instrument like that used in our country by the men called pig-gelders. Seeing that there were such fine woods, and that the Indians were friendly, we resolved to build a brigantine in this island, and the Chief Pilot landed to superintend the building of the vessel, in which the islands of this archipelago were to be explored. He came to a settlement of Indians with their wives, who also go naked, only covering their privy parts with leaves ; they gave us some cocoa-nuts and vinaus,[1] which are roots which they eat, and also a cake made of these roots, and cocoa-nuts and some almonds, for there are beautiful almond trees in the woods of this country. The Master of the Camp went to explore the island, and found fertile lands, mountains, and rivers; he had some difficulties with the Indians, for, though they are not very numerous, the people of one village are at war with the people of the others; and at last, climbing to the summit of a very high mountain, he found that this was an island, and not a continent; and so the natives said when we first arrived, and also that to the east [west?] there were several islands, and towards the east, where the sun rose, there were none. The Master of the Camp returned with great difficulty, on account both of the weather, which was very severe and rainy, and of several skirmishes with the Indians.

---

[1] Called in the other narrative Vinahú, the present native word for the *taro* (*Arum Esculentum*). Mr. Woodford found the accent to be on the last syllable, an unusual occurrence in these dialects.

This island of Santa Ysabel lies from east to west with the city of Truxillo in 8 degrees south latitude, and 1,700 leagues from Lima as the pilots told us; though I think they were mistaken, for had it been so, we should have found some signs of wealth and a more civilized people, as Miguel Lopez de Legaspe[1] found beyond the Philippine Islands, although they are to the north. The Indians of this island of Santa Ysabel are idolaters; they worship the Devil, who appears to them in the form of a lizard or snake, according to their account. We saw, in some little houses where they pray, many figures of crocodiles and snakes;[2] we even saw some alive in some of the rooms of the said houses of prayer. The people of this island are brutish; they eat human flesh, and devour people when they can catch them, in time of war, or in time of peace by treachery; and thus they presented the General on several occasions with quarters of Indians, as things greatly esteemed and valued among them.

---

[1] The founder of the first Spanish settlement of San Miguel, at the town of Cebu in the Philippines, in 1565. The "Islas de Poniente" were first referred to as the "Filipinas," in a letter of Legaspe, written this same year, 1567.

[2] The tambu-houses are adorned with carvings of alligators, sharks, etc., and the skulls of the dead are sometimes enclosed in the body of the image.

When the brigantine was finished, which was on the 23rd [4th ?] of April of the said year, it was launched and was named the Santiago. The Master of the Camp embarked in it, with thirteen soldiers and the Chief Pilot, Hernan Gallego, and eight sailors, and seven servants. We cruised along the island towards the south, and on the other side towards the west, where there are many islands. We left the port on the 7th of April, and met with a contrary wind; and therefore we returned again to the port within sight of the ships, and the next day we navigated in heavy rain and reached the island of palm-trees,[1] and from thence we were accompanied by several canoes. A contrary wind arose which obliged us to put into port in that island, where we found Indians who shot arrows at us, and we frightened them with our arquebuses, and in some huts we found provisions, which we brought to the brigantine. On Palm Sunday we went out of this port, and towards the north we saw an island which we called Ramos.[2] From the coast where we had been the night before there came four canoes, and in them one hundred and thirty Indians with bows and arrows, and among them an old man, standing up with his bow threatening the rest, and declaring that it was he who would carry us off to be eaten; and he ordered us to go with him, otherwise he would loose his arrow, and kill us. Upon this they all surrounded us, and shot several arrows at us. We defended ourselves, and the old man fell dead, shot by an arquebus, and seeing this they left us. We were then driven by rough weather to put back to the coast of Santa Ysabel from which we had come; and as the pilot saw that we were not in a good position there, we used the oars to get out, and, doubling a point, we entered a bay full of reefs.[1] The next day we saw a few small islands; and on Maundy Thursday, cruising along this coast, we were more firmly convinced that Santa Ysabel was an island: for, though we had recognised it as such from the aforesaid mountains, we were not certain, because it trended away towards the south-east. The pilot thought fit to touch at an island which lay among others to the south, and we left the coast of the island of Santa Ysabel. The island we sought was surrounded by many reefs, and we gave it the name of La Galera; it is two leagues in circumference. The next day, Good Friday, we set out, and came upon another island a league and a half further on, which had many mountains and good fields, and we gave it the name of Buena Vista. Here we came upon some Indians, who showed great joy because, as it had fallen calm, we gave them a rope to tow us to the island. Each of the canoes asked for a rope too, their design being only to kill and eat us, but the brigantine could not reach the land, because it was low tide. The Master of the Camp landed, and took possession of the island in the name of His Majesty. We attempted to cut down a cocoa-nut palm for food, because the negroes would not barter any provisions with us, but they rose up against us, and discharged arrows at us, so that we were obliged to defend ourselves with our arquebuses; and we killed one of their petty chiefs, and obliged them to leave us alone. We re-embarked in the brigantine, and went to a small island a quarter of a league from this, in which we found a quantity of cocoa-nuts, and the natives gave us a pig like those of Castille, except that it was wild, very small, and of a bad taste. We asked them for more pigs, but they said that they had only a few, because they had to be brought from other islands. They gave us another, with which we celebrated Easter. It was the first meat that we had seen in these parts, and the first fresh meat we had tasted since we left Peru, for we had only a little of any kind. This land and the island of Santa Ysabel appear to be better than Spain, although the natives have no sort of drink, nor any provisions beyond those we have mentioned, nor gold, nor silver. It is hoped that there are pearls, for we saw many shells.

---

[1] Called Ninuha in the Admiralty Chart.

[2] Malaita.

---

[1] *Arri* in the MS.

We left this island on Easter Sunday, and went to another half a league off, which we called San Dimas;[1] at noon, when we left the port, we saw a very bright star, as if it had been night. Several canoes came out as before, with professions of peace and signs of hostility. In spite of this we cast anchor at the said island, the Indians from the land joining those in the canoes, till they numbered more than six hundred. As we were not in a good position there, we passed on to another point, and the Indians attacked us very fiercely; we frightened them off with our arquebuses, killing several of them, whereupon they left us. Having taken possession of this island we passed on to another, and on Easter Monday we left this island of San Dimas; and towards the south-east there appeared a rather large island, but we could not reach it. We discovered a small island, to which we gave the name of Sesarga.[2] From thence we went to the large island, of which we took possession for His Majesty, and we called it Guadalcanal, and a river which was there we called Ortega. The miners would have it that there was gold there, but I did not see any.[3] We found here the first ginger we had seen. The island is in the latitude of 10½ degrees south of the Equator. We resolved to go round the island of Santa Ysabel, and explore the other side to see whether there were any other island there, intending to suggest to the Governor that he should come to that island with the ships and men, because it had a better climate and was more fertile. We went, therefore, to another island at the end of Santa Ysabel, which is called Boru, and reached it on Wednesday the 21st of April. There are many small islands around it, and numerous reefs. The Indians had carried off all the provisions, and had fled into the woods. In this island they gave us some little pigs; it is thickly populated, and we gave it the name of San Jorge.[1] We navigated until the 21st of April without seeing any canoes; but on that day there came eight canoes belonging to fishermen, who discharged a shower of arrows at us, and wounded a soldier; then we killed one of them, and they took to flight. There are many reefs on this coast. The Indians are not at peace among themselves.

---

[1] See p. 29, *note*.

[2] Savo Island.

[3] It is evident from this passage that the writer was one of the crew of the brigantine.

One day, we saw a great number of bats as large as kites, passing from one island to another. This day we took the sun, and found that this island lies from east to west-quarter-north-west in the latitude 7 degrees 8 minutes, and the other point, which lies to the east, is in latitude 7 degrees, all south of the equator. The island is 110 leagues in length.

The next day, Tuesday the 27th of April, the Chief Pilot tried to cross in a canoe to explore a channel, thinking to find a passage there; but he could not do so on account of the many currents, and therefore he returned. The next day, Wednesday, we left this archipelago of islands on the north side, steering for the coast of Santa Ysabel. We saw several canoes, which came out as before. All along this coast there are many reefs which extend more than 20 leagues into the sea; and thus we reached the said coast in quest of the ships, with great difficulty, and six soldiers were almost lost by trying to go before us in a canoe, to give the General news of our coming.

---

[1] St. George's Island.

On the 4th of May we came to the place where the General was with the ships, and they rejoiced greatly at our coming. Then the order was given to leave that port, because it is very unhealthy, and of the same climate and heat as Nombre de Dios, and therefore the Master of the Camp and a fourth of the soldiers died (*sic*), and many fell ill. We left it three days later, and steered for the island of Guadalcanal, where we put into port on the 12th of May, near the river that we had called Ortega. When we had landed, we and the friars erected a cross upon a little hill, and the Indians stole it; but seeing that we were prepared to go in search of it they brought it back, and never took it away again. The General ordered Andres Nuñez with twenty men to climb to the summit of a high mountain, in order to discover whether there were islands, and he sent the brigantine forward along the coast to discover what they could. He who went into the interior had a few skirmishes with the Indians, and journeyed for about 10 leagues; after which he returned, because some of the soldiers had fallen ill, and all their match was finished; they saw hens like those of Castille, but nothing else.

At this time the steward of the *Capitana* went off in a boat with nine others, only to fetch water, and though there were two arquebusiers among them, they were so unfortunate as to be all killed by the Indians, except a negro, who escaped by swimming; one of the arquebusiers dropped his match into the water, and the powder of the other would not explode, and so they all perished, and were quartered and cut to pieces, and the Indians cut off the heads of some, and the arms and legs of others. Although they were very near, it was impossible to succour them, because, not hearing the report of the arquebuses, we knew nothing of the disaster. The General endeavoured to punish the Indians, but they were so active that he could not do much, for we were on foot, and the ground was very rough.

Don Hernando Enriquez returned with the brigantine before his time, because the Chief Pilot and some of the others had fallen ill, so that he could not continue his navigation. He brought news that he had seen islands and many natives, who had received him sometimes in peace and sometimes with hostility; and he had had some dangerous encounters with them, in which some were killed with the arquebuses. In this place we found an Indian's club of ironstone,[1] which is found in this country, and the owner set no small value on it, for it was wrapped up in palm leaves; though afterwards in other islands we found a few others of the same kind. After going forward along the coast of the island of Guadalcanal, we reached [the end of] it on the 24th of May; and from thence we went to another island[2] which lay 15 leagues to the west [north-east?], where we found still more naked Indians, for neither the men nor the women wore anything whatever; they have hair of many different colours. We were on the same terms with them as with those we had hitherto met. From thence we passed to another island, 8 leagues further on. We went with the Indians, neither more nor less,[3] and landed to provide ourselves with water and provisions. We saw some plains and many Indian villages, and things belonging to their demons, which were painted with horns, and they offer them such food as they eat themselves, and they had placed offerings of food for them in dark places. Here we saw vessels built of planks like those of Spain, and two canoes fought against us, but seeing the harm which we did them, they returned as before. We gave to this island the name of "Atreguada."[1] These people are well-grown and strong. From thence we saw three desert islands, to which we gave the name of "Las Tres Marias."[2] From thence we went to the large island,[3] and the Pilot fell ill, and therefore we resolved to return. And on the way we came upon some islands from which Indians came out like those of the other islands. In one island we came upon Indians with their lances and arms, and we gave this island the name of "San Juan;"[4] it is from 8 to 10 leagues in circumference; and from thence we returned to where the ships were.

---

[1] We take *Margarita* to be an error in transcription for *Margagita* (see p. 182, *note*).

[2] Malaita.

[3] *I.e.*, they behaved to the natives as the natives behaved to them.

At that time the Indians attempted to surprise some Spanish carpenters who were cutting timber for the ships; and having perceived them, the General and the arquebusiers went against them, and ordered them to be quartered and put in the place where the steward and other soldiers had formerly been put to death, for his party was sufficient to triumph over the twenty-two Indians.

The General went out to attack the boats, and see whether he could inflict some chastisement on the Indian miscreants; and, having set fire to a little village, he returned without doing any further damage.

On Monday, the 14th of June, we set sail with the intention of going to the island of San Juan, because it appeared to the pilot to be a convenient place for careening the ships and for making the necessary repairs; and in the meanwhile the brigantine could go and explore. We set out, therefore, all together, and during this voyage we encountered great difficulties from storms and wind, which caused us great trouble and danger, until at last we reached the port of La Visitacion de Nuestra Señora. Here we found a little village, the inhabitants of which received us peacefully, and the next day we begged them to give us some provisions, but they would not do so, and we were obliged to take them by force. The General arranged to send Francisco Muñoz to discover other islands, and so the brigantine set out on the 5th of July, with fourteen arquebusiers and the Chief Pilot, Hernan Gallego. Finding that there was no outlet to the north, without many *munglares* (*sic*), they went along the coast of this island of San Christoval, and discovered many islands, and some Indians who came out to them, sometimes in peace and sometimes in hostility, and they had skirmishes with the latter, in which Fernan [Francisco] Muñoz was wounded in the hand, as well as some of the soldiers; and thereupon he returned to where the General was, having cruised for many leagues along the coast. The General gave orders that we should put into port, to careen and repair the ships for navigation; but the Chief Pilot and the Master of the Camp having sought such a port in vain, it was resolved to careen the ships where we were. Accordingly, we all landed with our clothes and everything that was in the ships; and, everything having been safely stowed away, the careening was proceeded with. One day, while we were hearing Mass, we heard cries, and, hastening to the spot, we found that the Indians were killing a Spaniard, and had attacked and badly wounded another; these men had left the camp to cut palmettoes, though orders had been given that no one should leave it. He who was killed was a Gallego [Galician], and from thenceforward a stricter watch was kept upon the camp, though we had trouble enough with the Indians, who gave us the alarm every day. Seeing that the repairs were finished and the provisions were gradually diminishing, the General took counsel with the pilots and captains as to what should be done: whether, now that this island was discovered, it were better to settle in it, or to go in search of other lands. To this Hernan Gallego replied that there was no time to look for other islands, because every day they were consuming the provisions, and the rigging of the ships was getting more worn, and we were too few in number to colonize the island, and most of the men were sick, and the Indians up in arms, so that we could not dwell amongst them ; and, if we delayed any longer, we should be unable to return to report to His Majesty what we had discovered. The other pilots and soldiers agreed with this opinion, and said that, in the service of God and the king, the purpose of their coming was to find good lands ; and though this land was good, there was no gold, nor silver, nor other kind of metal, and, therefore it was better to return ; for it was not possible to make a settlement there, because the ammunition was running short, and the arquebuses were damaged so that they could not be used, and the natives were numerous and warlike. The kingdom we had come from was too remote for succour to reach us quickly ; and therefore we should return and report what we had seen to His Majesty, that he might give capture a man with his wife and new-born infant, who, with another Indian girl, were safely stowed under hatches that they might not escape.

---

[1] Ulawa Island (see p. 48, *note*).

[2] The Three Sisters (Old Malau).

[3] San Christoval.

[4] Ugi Island.

On the feast of San Lorenço we all received communion on shore, and on the 11th of August we set sail, and plied to windward in sight of this island of San Christoval; and after eight days, with great labour we doubled (*problamos*) the island, and sighted the islands of Santa Catalina, and Santa Anna. We were towing the brigantine, but, the ship being in danger, we were obliged to let her go. All this time the wind in this gulf was easterly, and the Chief Pilot, seeing that in this easterly weather the rigging was wearing out and breaking every day, and the number of sailors diminishing, represented to the General that it was not possible to go further without destroying the fleet, and he requested the soldiers to make the same representation. The General ordered counsel to be taken with the pilots, and the matter was discussed by shouting from one ship to the other, the universal opinion being that if we went on we must be lost. The General bade them record it in writing; and they not only did so, but urged their request with protests and demands, and he gave orders accordingly that we should return to the kingdom of Peru, and not by any means continue making for New Spain. The Pilot, Hernan Gallego, a man very skilful in his office, replied that he would do all that lay in his power, but that this course would not prevent us from steering north, where there was no danger of storms except in crossing the Line northward, and therefore he must necessarily come upon the coast of New Spain.[1] Thus we steered sometimes north-east and east, but generally north, and always to windward. In the morning of the 7th of September we sighted land to windward two leagues from us,[1] and the pilot said that it was the shoals of San Bartolomeo, but we could not reach them. We also saw other shoals to leeward. There were many currents. The Master of the Camp and several soldiers, having landed upon an islet, found some huts (*vraios*) separated from each other upon a little eminence, and they found fresh food and hens; and among several curiosities which they found there was a chisel made from a nail, from which it was supposed that Spaniards had been in the island. When they had re-embarked, and we had gone two leagues, we saw a sail, although we could not see the hull; and, in order to ascertain what it was, we spread full sail, but we lost sight of it.[2] We proceeded on our journey without a break, until we reached the latitude of 21 degrees, where we sighted a desert island, which we named the Island of San Francisco.[3] It is surrounded by many reefs. This was the eve of the feast of St. Francis, in the month of October, and we continued our voyage to the latitude of 30 and 32 degrees. It was now eight days since we had been separated from the *Almiranta*, which had dropped astern; and, seeing that she did not come up, we furled our sails. She did the same, whereupon we set ours again, in order to make them understand that they were to imitate us, and that we had waited for them; but it was of no use. That night we sailed under our courses, but the next day we could not see her, and we were obliged to wait all day. When the Chief Pilot and the General came [on deck] they reprimanded the pilots; but, nevertheless, we remained there another day, but saw the *Almiranta* no more; and, as the wind and sea were increasing, we could not wait for her before reaching Cape Corrientes. While navigating in the latitude of 32 degrees, the wind increased so much that we were obliged to furl our sails and lie with the sea on our beam; and so we remained until evening. On Sunday, the 18th of October, the wind raised such a sea (although there was not so much sea as wind) that such a thing had never been seen, though it lasted but a little while. The pilot said that it was a violent hurricane. Then we all began to recite the litanies and recommend ourselves to God, the wind and sea being so violent on the lee side that the water swept over the boat, and we were under water whenever a sea struck us. The friars comforted us with holy words, urging us to forgive one another, and beseech our Lord to have mercy on us. Thus, those who were at enmity embraced one another, and we all set ourselves to help the sailors. The pilot now ordered some sail to be set upon the foremast to steady the ship, that we might proceed with reduced sail; but it had hardly been unfurled when it was torn to a thousand pieces and carried away by the hurricane. Seeing that the foresail would not hold, that we could not back the ship, that the shocks were heavier, that the boat was floating about, and that we had shipped so much water that the ship was nearly foundering, we hastily battened down the hatches, and cut loose and launched the boat so easily that eight men sufficed to accomplish it. The pilot ran up and down, seeking a remedy; then he gave orders that the storm-sails and several blankets should be set, but it was of no use, for the wind was so high that it carried them away, and getting way on the ship only brought the sea aboard. It was then resolved to cut away the mainmast, which fell in such a manner that it did no harm, and we again had recourse to the blankets; and with these and the cutting away of the mast, and the rapid working of the pump, the ship seemed lightened. Seeing this, we gave great thanks to God, making in return many promises for the mercy which our Lady had shown us by being our advocate on this occasion. That night, and from thenceforward, we mended the sails with old ones as well as we could, and lashed together some spars which we had with us, until we reached the latitude of 28 degrees, where, on another night, we endured a second tempest. This was on the 21st of the said month, and it was as severe as the former storm, the waves rising so high and wild that the sea was white with foam. This storm lasted until the next day, but, the ship being so much lighter, we got through it better. From that time forward we had occasionally stormy seas, which frightened us because of the terror that we had undergone. In the midst of these misfortunes and miseries another fell upon us which entailed great hardship, and this was the lack of water; for what we had was putrid and stinking from the cockroaches which had fallen into it, so that none could drink it, and the biscuit was so covered with the marks of these cockroaches, and was so musty and rotten, that none could eat it. Besides this, we were obliged to cut down the rations, which was no small hardship; but even the soldiers suggested it, seeing the straits we were in, for we knew not how or where we should see land again. Our misery increasing, and our rations and comforts diminishing, many fell sick of a disease very common in these seas. The gums swell in such a way that they cover the teeth; if this is accompanied by pains in the kidneys the patient dies, but if not, he recovers. Many suffered from another evil, which was the loss of sight, especially the sailors, for at night they could not see at all. We did not complain of the winds, even though they came in tempests, because they relieved our thirst, for we could enjoy the water which was collected in *saumas* [jars ?]. After a few days we saw a piece of wood in the water, for which, as it was a promise of safety, and a sign that we were near land, we sent a sailor overboard with a rope, and he brought it to the ship. We made a cross of it, and fastened it to the foremast, and we made many others of the pieces, which we hung about our necks. Such was our misery and misfortune in this gulf that we very nearly steered for the Philippines, where Miguel Lopez de Legaspe is Governor, in order to refit and provide ourselves with what we required, and then to return at the season that is known there. One day, a soldier who was on the watch sighted land, although it was very cloudy, having first seen certain grasses which are called *corrediras;* and thus with great trouble we put into port in the latitude of 22 degrees, and from thence we navigated to the port[1] on the coast of New Spain, having passed through the latitudes of 31¼ to 32 degrees, from whence we navigated as far as the port of Colima; and after a voyage of five months we put into the first port of New Spain on New Year's day.

---

[1] The writer seems to have misunderstood the point in dispute. Mendaña wished to beat to windward until the Equinox, when he thought the wind would become fair for Peru. Gallego wanted to cross the Line and steer for California, whence he intended to coast southward to Lima. The discussion is very clearly stated by Sarmiento on p. 92.

---

[1] The Musquillo Islands, in the Marshall Group (see p. 67, *note*).

[2] It was the first sail that they had seen, for the Solomon Islanders propel their canoes with the paddle only.

[3] Wake's Island (see p. 69, *note*).

Memorandum of the Provisions to be found in this Island.

Certain roots called *benaus* [or *Vinahu,* the present native name for the *taro* (*Arum esculentum*)].

A great quantity of large *ñames.* [Yams: *ñames* is probably the Spanish, and not the native, name of the root. Compare the French word *ignames.*]

Other smaller roots like potatoes, which are called *pañales.* [The small yam of Gela, called *pana* by the natives.]

A great quantity of cocoa-nuts.

Many plantains, wild, and in the huts.

---

[1] The writer probably means Sebastian Vizcaino Bay (see p. 75).

Wild oranges and limes; the Indians did not plant any.

Quantities of sweet cane, wild, and in the huts.

Quantities of ginger, wild, and in the huts.

Quantities of sweet basil, wild, and in the huts.

Pigs, like those of Castille.

Quantities of doves, like ring-doves; they have gulls.

Cocks and hens of Castille.

Many other kinds of birds, such as partridges and others.

Pheasants (*verguz*) and other birds.

Parrots of all colours, like those of the other Indies of the North.

Other parrots entirely white, with a crest of feathers on their heads, the same as the *calybaxa*, but with no other colour; they are very tame, and never fierce. They are to be highly esteemed, for they are the most beautiful birds ever seen. We brought one with us, but it was killed by the General, near the coast of New Spain, to provide food for the Ensign-General, Don Hernando Henriquez, in his extremity.

There are macaws (*guazacayas*), great and small, with crests. There are many different wild native species.

Wild geese, like those of Spain.

There is no grain of any kind, nor any other domestic animal than those already mentioned.

There are mice.

There are quantities of good native fruit.

There are very good eggs.

There are almonds like those of Castille, with a very good taste, though they have very tough shells, and other strange fruits. [The "almonds" were the fruit of the *Canarium*, or wild nut tree of these islands and the Malay Archipelago.]

There are little dogs, like the curs of Castille, but they do not all bark. [The dingo, which howls like a jackal instead of barking.]

There are bats so large that they measure more than five feet from the tip of one wing to the tip of the other.

Throughout the whole of these islands there is not found among the Indians a pot, jar, or vase of any kind, either made of clay or of anything else.

Neither is there any kind of metal, gold, silver, pewter, iron, nor anything else, except little club-headed sticks of ironstone [*Margarita* is evidently here an error for *Margagita*].

Nearly forty men died upon this voyage. God forgive them. Amen!

The *Almiranta*, after having been separated from the *Capitana* for three months, entered the same port of Navidad on the 25th of February, 1569, without knowing where they were, nor how they came, having no pilot.

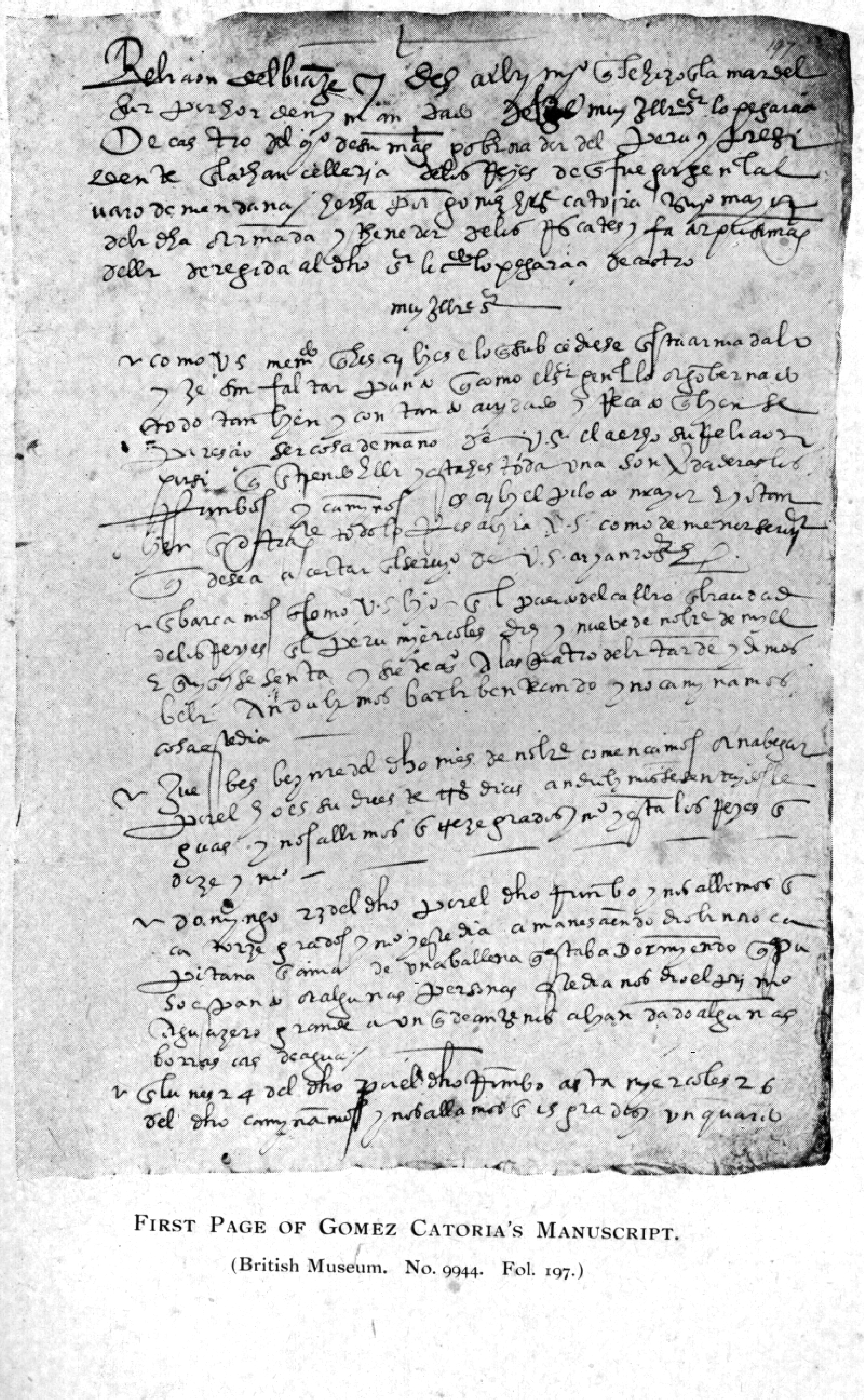
61B275(1)69

AN ACCOUNT
of
The Voyage and Discovery
which was made in the
South Sea,

In pursuance of an Order made by the VERY
ILLUSTRIOUS LORD LOPE GARCIA DE CASTRO,
a Member of His Majesty's Council, Governor of
Peru, and President of the Chancery of Los
Reyes, under the command of ALVARO DE
MENDAÑA as General, drawn up by GOMEZ
HRES CATOIRA,[1] Chief Purser of the said
Fleet, Custodian of the Objects for
Barter, and Comptroller for HIS
MAJESTY, addressed to the
said LORD LICENTIATE
LOPE GARCIA DE
CASTRO.

---

[1] Don Pascual de Gayangos thought that the C in Catoira may have been intended for Ç—Çatoira, or Zatoira.



FIRST PAGE OF GOMEZ CATORIA'S MANUSCRIPT.

(British Museum. No. 9944. Fol. 197.)

NARRATIVE OF CATOIRA.

VERY ILLUSTRIOUS LORD,

SINCE your Lordship commanded me to write an account of that which happened in this expedition, I have done so without failing in any point, for the General has ruled everything so well, and with such care and prudence, that it might well seem to be the work of your Lordship's own hand. He has made a report which I understand is identical with mine. The courses and distances are all correct; the Chief Pilot wrote them down and I also; all which your Lordship will receive as from a humble servant, who desires to be punctilious in the service of your Lordship whom our Lord, etc. [*sic*].

As your Lordship saw, we embarked in the Port of Callao, of the City of Los Reyes in Peru, on Wednesday, the 19th day of November, in the year 1567, at four o'clock in the afternoon, and setting sail, we beat to windward, but made no headway that day.

On Thursday, the 20th of the said month of November, we began to steer west-south-west for three days. We went 62 leagues, and found ourselves in 13½ degrees, Los Reyes being in 12½.

On Sunday, the 23rd of the said month, we sailed on the same course, and found ourselves in 14½ degrees, and this day, at day-break, the ship *Capitana* struck upon a sleeping whale, by which some persons were much frightened. This day we had the first heavy rain, although we had had several light showers before.

From Monday, the 24th of the said month, to Wednesday, the 26th of the said month, we continued on the same course, and found ourselves in 15¼ degrees.

On the next two following days and until the 28th of the said month, we steered west-quarter-south-west, and we went 62 leagues in 15¼ degrees.

On this said day we lost the winds of Peru, and we had east winds and fresh breezes. After that said day, the 28th of the said month, we went 50 leagues, with bright and fine weather on the 29th and 30th.

From Monday, the 1st of December, up to the 3rd, we went 65 leagues on the same course to the west. We were as far ahead as Teguantepe [Tehuantepec]; that is 40 leagues north and south with it, being 15½ degrees south of the equinoctial line.

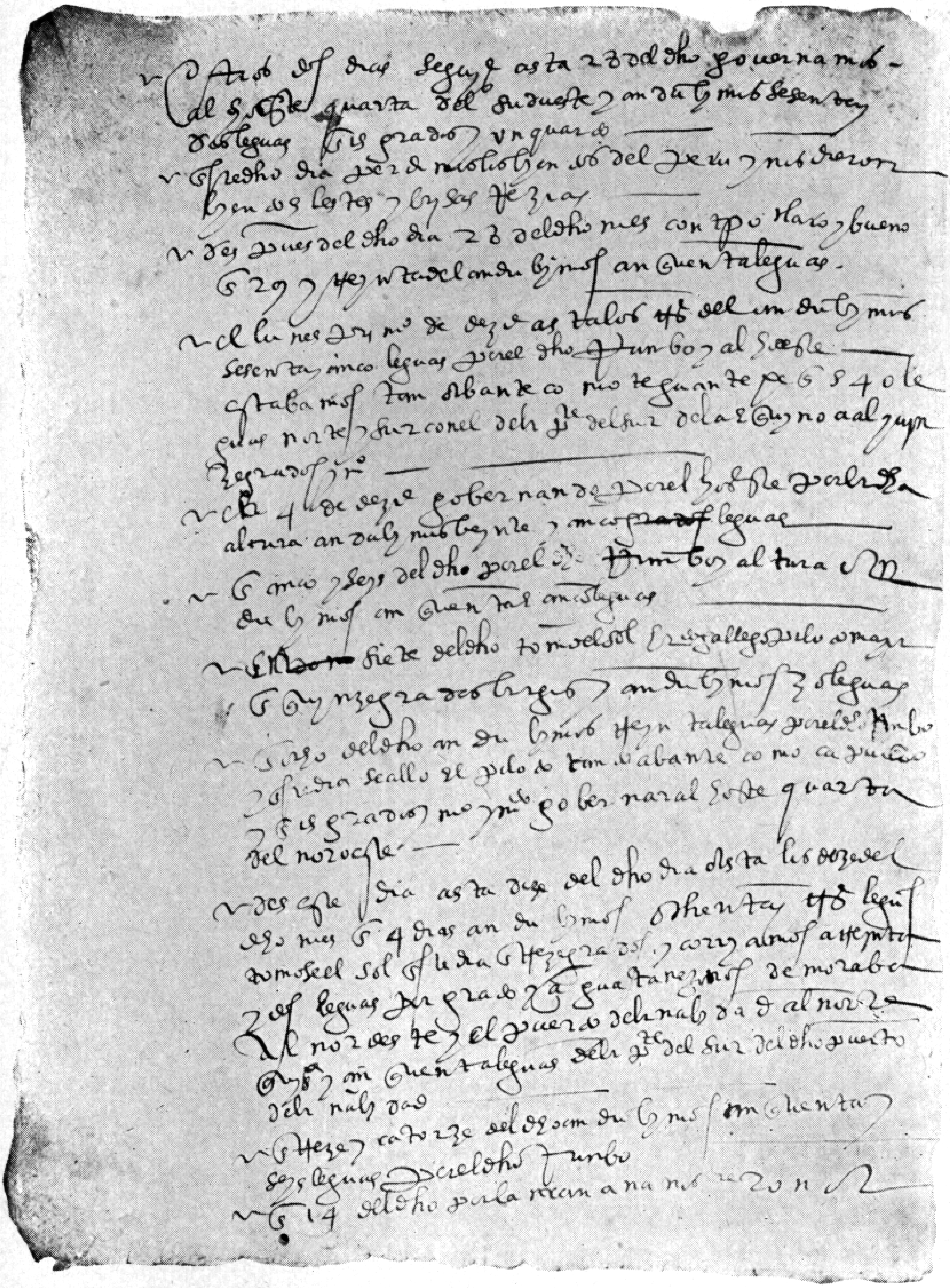
On the 4th of December, steering west in the same latitude, we went 25 leagues.

On the 5th and 6th of the same month, on the same course and in the same latitude we went 55 leagues.

On the 7th of the same month, Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, took the altitude of the sun in 15 degrees full, and we went 30 leagues.

On the 8th of the said month, we went 30 leagues on the same course, and that day the Pilot found himself as far ahead as Capodoro, and in 15½ degrees, and he ordered them to steer west-quarter-north-west.

From this day up to the 12th of the said month, in four days, we went 83 leagues. The altitude of the sun was taken on this day in 13 degrees, and we were running at



GOMEZ CATOIRA'S MANUSCRIPT.

(British Museum. No. 9944. Fol. 197.)

the rate of 32 leagues for each degree, and the Agua Tanezo bore north-east, and El Puerto de la Navidad north. We were 550 leagues south of the said Puerto de la Navidad.

On the 13th and 14th of the said month, we went 56 leagues on the same course.

On the 14th of the said month, in the morning, we had a heavy shower, and we made little headway on account of the water [rain ?].

On the 15th of the said month we went 35 leagues.

On the 16th of the said month we went 30 leagues.

On the 17th of the said month we went 35 leagues, west-north-west.

On the 18th of the said month, we went 35 leagues on the said course. We were in barely 7½ degrees.

On the 19th of the said month, the Chief Pilot took the altitude in 6½ degrees, and the Puerto de la Navidad bore north-east, and the islands of Salisco[1] north, and the Puerto de la Navidad is in 19⅓ degrees north, and the islands in 21¾ degrees, and that day we went 25 leagues.

On the 20th of the said month we went 25 leagues on the said course and latitude, and we had heavy showers.

On the 21st of the said month we went 25 leagues on the same course, west-quarter-north-west, and in the said latitude.

On the 22nd of the said month, we went 30 leagues, and found ourselves in 6 degrees.

On the 23rd of the said month, we went 30 leagues to the west, running free.

On the 24th and 25th of the said month, we went 50 leagues on the said course.

On the 26th of the said month, we went 30 leagues on the said course.

---

[1] Xalisco or Jalisco, a State on the west coast of Mexico.

On the 27th and 28th of the said month, we went 60 leagues.

On the 29th of the said month, we went 30 leagues.

On the 30th of the said month, we went 30 leagues.

On the 1st of January in the year 1568, we went 25 leagues. On this day, one of our boys fell into the sea, a half-caste of Peru named Caballos, who was playing with others: he fell overboard on the starboard side, and the Chief Pilot, Hernando Gallego, saw him fall overboard, and called out "Man overboard!" and we saw him drop astern shrieking out; we threw him out ropes to catch, but he could not lay hold of them. We threw out a hen-coop, but he was not able to take hold of it on account of the darkness; fortunately for him there was not much wind, although the ship was still moving.

Hernando Gallego tried to turn back for him, but he could not, for the ship would not go about, and so presently he ordered the sails to be furled, and we hailed him, and he answered, but in a tone of exhaustion. Then the *Almiranta,* which was coming up astern, reached us, and, although we called out to her to pick him up, she could not; and she bore down upon us so that our bowsprit was nearly carried away, and she passed on ahead. We again hailed the boy, but he did not answer, and we thought that he was drowned, and we commended him to God; but when we hailed him again he answered, but so faintly that we could hardly hear him; but we were very glad to hear him. When we saw that he could not reach the ship, two sailors threw themselves into the sea: the one was called Domingo Henriquez Gallego, and the other Juarez Mendez; and we threw a hatch into the sea, with a lead line attached, and they took it with them as they swam, and kept shouting to find out where he was; and so they got up to him and put him on the hatch, since, having been swimming for an hour, he was exhausted; and hauling in the hatch by the lead line, they drew him to the ship. He said that he had seen [? a light[1]] above him, and that Our Lady had delivered him.

On the 2nd of the said month of January, we went 10 leagues on the said course.

On the 3rd, 4th, and 5th of the said month, we went 75 leagues.

On the 6th and 7th of the said month, we went 35 leagues.

On the 8th of the said month we went 20 leagues, and we had a heavy downpour; and that day the said Juarez[2] fell overboard while the ship was moving through the water, and it pleased Our Lady that a rope should be hanging astern which he caught, and we drew him into the ship.

On the 9th, 10th, and 11th of the said month, we went 20 leagues.

On the 12th and 13th of the said month, we went 60 leagues on the said course.

On the 14th of the said month we went 30 leagues on the said course, and we had heavy squalls, with the wind north, north-west, west and south-west.

On the 15th of the said month of January, having had great squalls, and we were running west before the said wind the night before and in the morning, and were distant from Los Reyes 1,400 leagues; and a boy who chanced to go up to the masthead, discovered land[3] on the starboard to the south-west. It was a little, low-lying island about 6 leagues in circumference, full of groves of trees, which were palms. There was a great reef on the north side, and another smaller one on the south side, and from one side to the other a wide beach beset with reefs. This is on the west side, as for the east side, taking it as you face it, east and west from the sea, it looks like two galleys rowing from the northward, and in the middle there was a copse of trees like a fleet of ships. This island is in barely 6 degrees south.

---

[1] See Mendaña's narrative, p. 99.

[2] Mendaña calls him Juan Rodriguez Mendez.

[3] Nukufetau, an island in the Ellice group; see p. 14, *note*.

We gave it the name [Jesus] because we had discovered it through His name, and the gulf between it and Los Reyes we called de la Concioycion [Concepcion].

We were about 5 leagues distant when we saw it, and as Hernando Gallego thought that it would prove to be a small island, [not] inhabited, he wanted to go on, but the General said that in his instructions he was ordered to take possession of whatever land they found, and ascertain whether it was populated; and because they had been so long without seeing any land, in order to appease the people, he ordered them to go to it, and thus we reached it; but we could not take it because it was evening, and, as it was new land, we did not know where there was a harbour. And, being about half a league from it, we saw seven canoes come out from the shore; they were coming towards us, and five of them approached us, and two remained near the shore. In each there were seven men who appeared to be Indians, and they came rowing up to us, and when we saw them coming we furled the sails, and they raised their oars and went back to shore. And Gallego ordered the ship to be put about, because he did not know whether there was a harbour, and as we found no bottom in twelve fathoms, he said that they should search for it in a boat next day; and we beat up to windward that night, and the next day, when we were about to take possession of the land, we had many heavy rainstorms. That night the General ordered all the men to be paraded, so that if anything happened we should not be unprepared; and everyone was at his station, and the night was calm.

And the Indians signalled to us with lights from the shore, and we to them from the ships; and the people were all anxious to see whether they could take possession of the island. We gave it the name of Jesus, and to the gulf which we had crossed the name of De la Concioycion. This was the largest gulf that had been crossed, and I do not know that there was any other so large in all the discoveries. From the time we had left Callao we had spent fifty-seven days in reaching this island, sailing all the time with a fair wind and a calm sea.

And now, to return to what happened to us while we were trying to take possession of the island. Towards dawn, the weather began to grow thick, and rain fell, and afterwards such a strong and blustering wind arose that we fell off very perceptibly. We approached the land in such a position that we might have taken possession of it, but, when it was daylight, we looked for the *Almiranta*, and could not see her; and we stood off out to sea, and there we saw her far to leeward of the island. The General told the pilots that it would be better to put back to the shore, since, if the other ship saw us, she would follow us, and he understood from them that it would be impossible for the *Almiranta* to fetch the island, as she was to leeward of us; and that, if we returned to it, there would be a great risk of losing the said ship, since she could not reach it.

And so he ordered us to turn towards the said ship, with the intention of returning together to the island if they were able. And as we came up to her she tacked towards the island, and we sailed on this tack with both ships, and passed the whole day tacking on and off shore. And the rain and the wind were so great that we fell off more than 6 leagues. When the pilots saw this they said that they could not make the island, and that if we persisted in trying to make it, we should fall off so much that we should not be able afterwards to place ourselves in the latitude that we had left, which was in 6 degrees; and moreover that it was already such miserable weather, and as far as they could see there were signs of it becoming much worse; and it appeared to them that it was not a right thing to put the ships in danger, and that they would soon find other land. The General told them that he had a great desire to make the land, in order to take possession of it in the name of His Majesty, and procure water from it, because that which we carried had gone bad, and he thought that the crew would be glad of it, but, if it would endanger the ships, we should go forward. And so we spent all that day near the same island, and some sailors said that they saw another, but it was not certain.

On the 17th of the said month of January, the wind increased a little, and we went north-west, with heavy showers all the time; and on that day the Chief Pilot said that he had never seen such a tempest in the Southern Ocean, and that he had seen many signs of hurricanes.

And after we had left the island, that is from the 17th to the 19th, we went 40 leagues west and west-north-west, because the wind was always from the north-east and north. The Chief Pilot said it would be better to go down to 6 degrees, to be able to gain latitude, because the current and the north-west winds would prevent us from reaching the Equinoctial line. On that day Hernando Gallego took the sun, and ordered them to steer west-quarter-north-west to fall off a little, in order to be able to take the sun better.

On the 20th and 22nd we went 20 leagues.

On the 23rd and 24th we went another 20 leagues.

On the 25th we went 35 leagues, with the wind north-west, and so strong that our ship could only carry the courses; and we furled the sails now and then to wait for our consort, and were continually losing a quarter of our distance by waiting for her; and at times she furled sail for fear of striking on shallows, although we went ahead; and they were continually blaming us, and putting it all upon us that we had not fetched the island, it being on their account that we left off trying to fetch it.

On the 26th and 27th of the said month we went 25 leagues, always in the latitude of 6 degrees, with heavy showers, and one of these lasted twelve hours.

On the 28th of the said month we went 15 leagues on the said course, and Hernando Gallego took the sun in 5¼ degrees; and then he ordered them to yaw to the south-west, because the currents were carrying us into a lower latitude.

On the 29th and 30th of the said month we sailed 10 leagues, with some westerly wind, which compelled us to lower our sails.

And on the last day of the said month of January we went 5 leagues, on account of the calms and contrary winds, as on the previous days.

On the 1st of February, at two o'clock in the day, a little more or less, going on with a light wind, although we had furled sail two or three times the night before, always advancing with caution, and keeping a look-out ahead, as we were steering west, Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, saw the sea breaking on the starboard side; and he sent aloft to see whether any land was visible, but there appeared to be nothing but some reefs which might have been 6 leagues in extent, stretching from north-quarter-north-east to south-west, and we coasted along them at a distance of about a league. The sea appeared to be breaking over them in every direction, and he ordered them to be called Los Baxos de la Candelaria, because we sighted them on the eve of that festival. They are in 6 degrees full. Thinking that there was low land, we went coasting along them all that day, to see whether we could approach or touch at them, and whether there was any wood or water, although we did not much need them then. We were coasting along them till the hour of Vespers, tacking occasionally when the wind blew from over them, and presently the wind dropped so that what came was west; and as we could not reach them, we turned north-north-west, and the wind chopped to west-north-west and west, with bursts of hurricanes and many heavy downpours and whirlwinds, so that we were obliged to furl our sails and remain in a cross sea all night.

On Monday, the 2nd of the said month, the day of Our Lady of Candlemas, and on the 3rd of the said month, we were in a cross sea, because the wind was contrary, with many hurricanes and lightnings, which, having passed, instantly returned with thunder.

On the 4th of the said month the wind went down a little, and we were on one tack and the other to see whether we could make the reefs, in order that we might not fall to leeward; and, it being night, we furled sail, as the wind was contrary.

On the 5th of the said month, in order not to fall to leeward, we set sail, and steered south-west-quarter-west, tacking along the reefs in the latitude of 6 degrees, in search of the land, which we thought could not be very far off, and during the night the wind became contrary. We struck sail, and in the morning we saw many signs of land, such as cocoa-nuts, palm-branches, sea-snakes, toads, crabs, oranges, and many other things from the land, which gave us great joy.

On the 6th of the said month we made little way because it was calm, and the wind was contrary, and we hove to.

On the Saturday following, the 7th of the said month of January [*sic*[1]] of the year 1568, Our Lord was pleased that after we had sighted the reefs, being about 15 leagues from them, and steering north-north-west under the fore-sail, with the wind west, so as not to fall off to a higher latitude because the wind was generally northerly, Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, sighted a long tract of land, and we thought that it must be a continent because it was so long and high. We were about 15 leagues distant from it, and we were all that day and the next coming up to it. As soon as the natives saw us a great many canoes began to come off. They were long, and pointed at the ends in the shape of a crescent moon, and all full of Indians equipped for war, with their bows and arrows and clubs and lances of palm. They made signs of peace, saying many times "*tauriqui.*" It appeared to us that they were asking for our chief, and as they persisted in it, we pointed the General out to them. And when they had recognised him, he made signs to them, but they would not come on board. Presently the General threw them a coloured cap, and they took it and gave it to a chief who came in a canoe, and they put it on his head, and the rest asked for some also. And there came many other canoes, and in them many *tauriquis,* which means chiefs, and they all asked for caps. And three or four others were thrown into the sea to them. And they took them and gave them to their chiefs; but all this giving them caps and making them signs of peace, though they wondered at it, did not avail anything. When we made the sign of the cross they did the same, and one of them did it several times. But for all this they would not come on board, until a sailor swam out, and got into one of the canoes, and when they saw this they began to approach, although timidly. And about two dozen of them came up into the ship, and the General embraced some of them and showed them kindness, and he ordered bread and wine to be given to them, and they ate preserves and meat. They did not like the biscuit, and the wine was not to their taste. They pronounced our language well, like ourselves, and they repeated the Lord's Prayer, and pronounced it well. And the General ordered a shirt and some beads and caps and jingling bells and other things to be given them. And they received them gladly, and they went about the ship eagerly, looking for something to steal,[1] and anything that they found they threw into the sea to the canoes, and one of them would have seized a bell and thrown it overboard if they had not taken it away from him; and suddenly one of them ran up to the maintop. These canoes are light, and there are some of them that row thirty oars, and are swift enough to keep up with the ship in full sail. They went 3 or 4 leagues [with us]. In the evening we arrived at the land, and, not knowing of any port, we did not anchor, but the General sent Juan Manriquez with some soldiers and sailors in a boat to see whether there was a port, and when the natives saw them go they were much pleased. Part of the Indians went with the boat in their canoes, and part remained in the ship. The boat returned before nightfall without having found a harbour, and they said that when they were approaching the land a large canoe came out to them, in which were eighteen Indians making hostile demonstrations, the captain of them standing erect and brandishing a long palm-lance, the greater part of them being armed with bows and arrows. And the captain approached, speaking roughly to our people, and when he drew near them, a chief,[2] who had gone with our men in a canoe, went forward and spoke angrily to the Indians, whereupon they went away without being further aggressive, and our people returned to the ship. And when the chief saw that they were returning he grew sad, and called to them to go with him, making signs that he would give them to eat and drink on shore. This *tauriqui* had taken away a silver goblet which the General had given him full of wine, and would not take back. We were all night tacking on and off shore, and we were in great danger close to a reef which we saw, and when we tried to put the ship about she would not go, and we were not a cable's length[1] from the reef without being able to tack.

---

[1] The month was February.

---

[1] This is a good description of the behaviour of their descendants of the present day.

[2] The word is *canalucho*, canoe, which is evidently a mistake for *tauriqui*, or some similar word.

Our Lord was pleased to take us from thence, and we put out to sea till it was day. The General wished to punish some of the soldiers who were on guard, because they had not reported it, and they said that the pilots and sailors had seen it as well as themselves, and they had taken no notice of it, because the *Almiranta* was ahead, which was true, and was in more danger than ourselves because she went nearer.

On the morning of the next day, Monday, a boat was sent with people to look for a harbour, because they had not had time to find one the night before, and whilst the ships were beating about to follow them in, we came upon a ridge of rocks which forms the reef that I have mentioned. The ridge appeared to be more than a league in length, and in order to put out to sea, we went out over the top of it, close-hauled. We certainly seemed to be in great danger, for we could see the bottom very clearly, and we were in four, five, and six fathoms, and we did not know whether it would not get shallower. When we had got out to sea again, Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, thought that it would be as well to stand in again for the shore, and find a port in time, and not wait until we should meet with a cross sea, and be lost. And many implored the General not to consent to this until the boat which had gone to seek the harbour should return, but to make signals for her to come and pilot us. To this the General replied, that he believed Hernando Gallego to be a man of judgment, as indeed he was; and that he did not intend to prevent him from entering the harbour, since he dared to do so; and he said that he should let him do what appeared to him to be the best for the good of all. He ordered them to stand by the two anchors and the sheets, and have the ropes in hand, in case it should be necessary to anchor over the ridge. We were head to land, and, going with this resolve, we understood clearly that Our Lord was favouring us through the intercession of His Blessed Mother, and the three Magi Kings, whom we always besought as our advocates; for at about ten o'clock on the day after we had put to sea, and at the time that we were turning to enter through the ridge, we saw a star shining brilliantly over the maintop, and we took it for His guide, sent by Him to show us the entrance through the reef, because we entered through it by a narrow place where we could see the bottom very clearly. Presently we passed it, and found a good bottom and a depth of many fathoms; and so we found the harbour that we had so much desired.

---

[1] *Una huste* is doubtless meant for *un ahuste*, or *un ayuste*.

And because we had left the kingdom of Peru on the day of Santa Ysabel, and we had always taken her for the patron saint of the voyage, we called the island Santa Ysabel, and the harbour the Bahia de la Estrella (Bay of the Star).

Presently, while the *Capitana* was anchoring, many canoes of the Indians came alongside, and they gazed at us, half afraid at seeing such a new thing amongst them; and, as the *Almiranta*, having kept out to seaward of us, came in, and we were at anchor when she arrived, the General ordered her to be saluted, as the soldiers had become rather discontented and fatigued with their long voyage. So they fired off two pieces of artillery and some arquebuses, at which the natives were much amazed. As soon as the *Almiranta* had anchored, this 9th day of this said month of February, 1568, the General disembarked with the Master of the Camp, and the Ensign-General and the captains, and the father, Fray Francisco de Galvez, and the other friars and some soldiers, and we went on shore. And presently a large cross, which had been made, and which the said Father Galvez had brought with him, was set up; and thus, while he supported it, we recited prayers, and gave thanks to Our Lord for having guided us to port, and brought us in peace and concord with all. Then they erected it in an elevated and convenient spot, and the General took possession of the land in the name of His Majesty, and they performed the necessary formalities.

The next day, Tuesday, all went on shore and Mass was said, and all heard it, and commended themselves to Our Lord. That day there came alongside a chief, whom they called a *tauriqui*, which signifies lord; his own proper name was Vylevanarra, and his territory lies facing this harbour, being called in his language the town of Canball[1] [*sic*]; it is on top of a hill, a quarter of a league from the port. The *tauriqui* wore many white and coloured plumes on his head, a head-dress made of them, very white armlets of bone on his wrists, which looked like alabaster,[2] and a small shield on his neck, which they called *Taco taco*,[3] and his face was bedaubed with colours. He brought a present of a few cocoa-nuts, which the General accepted, giving him other presents in return. And after some persuasion he came on board; but before he did so, he made signs of peace, which were the same that had been made to us when we came in. He asked for a cap, offering one of his armlets in return, and with this he appeared satisfied. And the cap being given to him in his canoe, he sent forward some of the Indians, and when they had come on board a negro was playing a flute, and he and the Indians began to perform a dance, the like of which was never seen. The General made him sit down, and asked him his name, and what he called the sun, the moon, the heavens and other things. And he gave them all a name in his language, which is quickly understood, as ours is by them, because they speak distinctly and not affectedly like the people of Peru. They were delighted in storing our words in their memory, and asked us to teach them, which rejoiced us much, because of the good fruit which, please God, would come by teaching them our Holy Catholic Faith, to serve and know Him.

---

[1] Samba, as it is spelt by Mendaña, is the more likely form of the name. Probably the *C* is soft.

[2] Armlets made of the shell of the *Tridacna Gigas*.

[3] Probably the oblong wickerwork shield shown in one of our illustrations.

The Chief asked the General by signs to tell him his name; and, when he said he was called Mendaña, he took it for himself, and said that the General should call himself Vylevanarra, and that he would call himself Mendaña, for they are fond of exchanging names, and he was very much pleased; and, that he might not forget it, he kept saying over and over again, "Mendaña, Mendaña."[1] And he invited the General to eat with him next day at his residence, and when the General accepted, he was much pleased, and went away well contented.

On the morning of the next day, Wednesday, the General went on shore, to hear Mass, and whilst they were hearing it, there came twenty-eight[2] canoes with other

---

[1] The custom of exchanging names as a token of friendship used to be common throughout the Pacific.

[2] Mendaña says twenty-two.

tauriquis of this island to see us, a great novelty to them Amongst them was one called Meta, who would not come on shore, although the General called to him. And there also came two others, brothers of the *tauriqui* Vyle, and brought cocoa-nuts and other roots which they had. And they brought two well-built Indians, and asked the General to go with them, as Vyle was expecting him, and these strong Indians were to carry him on their shoulders up the hill, and when the General declined they went away.

And presently the *tauriqui* came to the ship, bringing cocoa-nuts and other food which they had. Their musical instruments are a number of small reed-pipes, bound together in order, some large and some small, after the fashion of an organ, upon which they played with their mouths, as one plays a fife, and large conch shells, which they called *coflis*. And the General ordered a trumpet, a drum and a fife, to be sounded, and some of the soldiers sang to the guitar; they admired our instruments, and they also danced, being fond of dancing. And as presents were given to them, they were very friendly; and they came to see us every day, although they brought but little food, and always carried arms.

One day they did not come, nor did any canoes appear. And there came four or five of another faction to see us, and it appeared that they had a wish for our friendship, although they never asked to come on board, nor even came near. And they always came in troops, standing up with their bows and arrows in their hands. And when our friend Vylevanarra saw that they were there, he came out of his port with four or five canoes full of men standing up in them; for when they come in this manner their intention is hostile, and it is a sign of war; otherwise they come seated. Looking very ferocious, he approached, and when the others saw him, they took to flight, and he pursued them in full chase. And when they saw that he was gaining on them, they surrendered, casting themselves down in the bottom of the canoes. Seeing that they had surrendered, he spoke to them and let them go, and he was very jubilant, whence we understood that there was enmity and war between them. Presently he came to the ship, and indicated by signs that the *tauriqui* Meta was engaging to kill us in conjunction with other *tauriquis*, amongst whom he named Aba Rau, Babalay, Coboa, Sanbe, Maelago, Amarotobo, Ganagau, and four or five others,[1] and he said that they were all combining to come to kill and eat us, from which we understood that they were cannibals. He told us that they had called upon him to join them, but that he had refused; and that, if they came, we were to call upon him, and he would assist us with his people. Having said this, he returned to his dwelling.

And for two days after that he did not come any more to the ships, which led us to believe that he had joined with the others, and was plotting treason. And in order to find out about him, the General resolved to send the Master of the Camp as if to visit him, and so to learn his intention. And with him went Don Hernando Henriquez and Captain Pedro Sarmiento, and twenty soldiers; and when they arrived at his dwelling, the natives received them more in fear than in friendship. They found nothing in their huts except two small dogs. The *tauriqui* offered them cocoa-nuts and water, but there was very little water, only one cane-full, and, though they asked for more, they would not bring it. We did not see that they had any other kind of provisions but cocoa-nuts and a root which they call *Vinau*, for food [Vinahu, the taro (*Arum Esculentum*)]. . . .[2]

---

[1] Mendaña spells the names Riari, Babalay, Coboa, Sambe, Maelago, Ciamarrotovo, and Ganigo.

[2] Here occurs the following passage: "Convidaron à los nuestros con algunas mujeres, y como ellos hiziesen asco y escopiesen dellas,

While conversing with them he [the Master of the Camp] ordered some to advance a little further and see whether there were any roads; but when a soldier stepped out, some of the Indians called to him before he had gone two blocks of buildings away, and he returned for fear of offending them; and when the Master of the Camp saw that they had not let him go, he ordered him to take a cask which he had given to the Indians, and to go and see what he had ordered him under pretext of fetching water. The soldiers remained and advanced no further, and Don Hernando Henriquez remained with them. The Master of the Camp and Captain Sarmiento took the *tauriqui* by the hand, and retired from the rest, talking with him. He took them to a hut lower down, where he lived, and showed them to his father. They said that they were much pleased to see him, and he to see them; he was a man who himself had authority, and looked like a chief; he was a very old man, very tall in stature, and with a very white beard so long that it reached down to his waist; he was whiter than his sons, and almost like a Spaniard. He was called Salacay. They were with him some time, and as their conversation appeared to the Indians to last too long, they began to tell them to go away, saying "*Fuera! Fuera!*" ("Away!") which they had learned from hearing us use it, for the soldiers had called out to them to keep away when they came to the ship; and as they said it so defiantly, our men withdrew so as not to cause them annoyance, and they began to return. When the Master of the Camp told Don Hernando that

---

por darles à entender que nos se las avyan de tomar, se admyraban, y más de que no las traxesemos. Y como algunos de los nuestros se apartaban pará orinar, ellas se yban tras ellos para ver con qué, y hubo una que vyno á tomar de la falda á un soldado por verlo. Como los nuestros se escusasen, se subyó un indio escondidamente encima de un árbol, donde algunos se apartaban à orinar, para a les ver sus verguenzas, porque no savyan qué juzgar de nosotros."

he had seen Salacay, the father of the *tauriqui* Vyle, he wished to go back and see him, so they all returned together; but when they arrived at the place, they did not find Salacay nor any other Indian, but only some clothes that we had given them, and the beads that the General had given them; they did not touch nor injure anything, although they might have taken many cocoa-nuts and other food, for there were palm-trees near the houses. Seeing a *mochadero* close by, they went to see what it contained, but they found nothing in it but things for working sorcery, and witchcraft (*bruxerias*), which were worth nothing. That is all that took place that day. They did not see any kind of silver or gold, nor anything that was worth a tomin,[1] nor anything from which to eat or drink, nor anything to sleep on.

One day there came to the ships some Indians belonging to another chief, in four canoes, in which they brought three women; and when they saw that we had no women with us, they tried to tempt us with them, asking us to buy them. We made them understand by signs that we did not want them, and that they had better take them away, which they did eventually. The women are well-favoured, and whiter than those of Peru; they have very fair hair[2] cut short below the ear, and both men and women go about naked.

Seeing that since our arrival at this land we had obtained no information whatever about it, because Vyle had not come to the ship as he was wont, and we did not know whether it was an island or a continent, the General held a consultation with the Master of the Camp, and the captains and the father, Fray Francisco de Galvez, the Vicar; and in the presence of them all, he asked the opinion of the latter, in order to unburden his conscience, and informed them that he wished to send inland to learn what there was there; and he reminded them that we had left Los Reyes in Peru without having touched land till we reached this Puerto de la Estrella; that we had expended the fourth part of our provisions; that up to this time we had seen nothing, and that we could not yet go out of this port for thirty days, because of the building of the brigantine which was to make the survey of the coast; that for this reason we must husband the food, and that we ought to avail ourselves of what the natives had; that although there was food enough in the ships for some time, still it was necessary to seek other lands; that with what there was in this land we should be able to sustain ourselves for as long as we remained in this port; that we had had intercourse with the *tauriqui*, and we treated each other as friends, and visited each other, and he had been asked by signs to bring food, and he would be paid for it; and that he [the General] had pressed him to visit us that the friendship might be confirmed; yet for all this neither he nor his Indians would bring any, but that on the contrary he had discontinued the visits which confirmed his friendship, and the Indians had become estranged, and did not come to the ships as was their wont; and that since our chief purpose was to do nothing to burden our consciences, and do everything which would be most fitting in the service of His Majesty, that they should give their opinion on the subject as each thought best. To whom the said Fray Francisco de Galvez, Vicar, answered that he knew that the General had fulfilled all his duties, and had exchanged friendship with the *tauriqui* who was the chief, and with his Indians, and had graciously given him several of the things brought for barter; and that therefore we might very well go inland and ask for food, paying for it with other things; and if the natives would not give it in barter we might take it in moderation, but we ought not to take it in such a quantity as to leave them despoiled, nor take any of their goods, nor their women nor children; and, since we had made friends with them, that in the event of their not consenting nor allowing us to take it, or if in defending it they fought and broke the peace, that in that case we might very well defend ourselves, and keep what we had taken of the food, but not follow up in pursuit more than might be necessary for defending ourselves from them. Then the General asked the Master of the Camp, and the soldiers, and captains what they thought; and they answered him that it would be well to send inland to explore it, and he decided to send Captain Pedro Sarmiento, and so it was done.

---

[1] A coin in the Indies worth about 2½*d.*

[2] The hair is bleached by being smeared with lime.

And on Monday the 16th of February, he went with twelve soldiers—I mean sixteen—and six boys to carry the food. He was to go through the territory of this *tauriqui* Vanarra, and to ascend the high land which formed a chain of hills which they saw from the port; and having arrived there he was to look about and ascertain the disposition of the land: whether it was an island or a continent, and what food the natives had, and to treat them with all friendship; and, if they were willing to give any food in barter, they were to bring back what they could; but on the other hand, they were not to take it against their will, nor do them any harm, but to proceed on their journey. The time that he limited them to was four days for going and returning; though they were at liberty to take some food by force, if the Indians would not give it in barter, yet the better to justify our cause, and make the natives understand that we were not going to do them any harm, he ordered him not to do so. And, according to the account that they brought back on their return, it would be seen what it would be best to do. They departed before dawn, on the day that I have mentioned, and when the Indians, who had sentinels, heard their approach, they began to sound large conchs, which they call *coſtis*, and when our people heard them they went up to an open space to await the dawn. At daybreak they began their march, and on the height, near the houses of the *tauriqui*, they came upon more than one hundred Indians who had assembled there, all equipped for war. And when our people came up to them they called out to them that they were friends, but, being unwilling to approach, they retreated. And our people marched on after them, following their road through a clearing (*cochilla*), which was inhabited. And a little further on they came upon them, and spoke with them, and made friends. They asked our people whither they were going, and whether they were seeking Vylevanarra, their *tauriqui*; and they said Yes; and the natives told them that he had gone to Baso,[1] which belongs to another chief; so they went on, and the Indians remained there. And as our people passed on, they got ahead of them by another road, to protect their houses, and placed themselves by fours at the doors of them, calling out to our people "*Afuera! Afuera!*" And so, lest they should think that they intended them mischief, they left them and passed on. And at the distance of half a league, they found six huts, close together, which were well made, and better than those of Vyle, and an idol-temple and many Indians, and with them the hundred whom they had left behind, who had got ahead of them by another road; our people understood from this that they wanted to fight, which they call *Narria*. And when our men came up to them, they asked for water, but they would not give them any, saying that they had none; so they left them, and turned to march onward straight towards a stream which they saw from thence. They reached it, and found the *tauriqui* Vylevanarra standing on the banks there, with more than two hundred Indians; and when our men came up to him they asked him to be friends, and he made signs of friendship, although our people did not believe his friendship to be sincere. Having done this, Captain Sarmiento told him that he should go with him to Baso, and he did so, he and his Indians. And they saw many others coming along the ridge of mountains above, sounding conchs to assemble the people; and they saw several Indians coming along from the banks of the river, and they joined the others and made friends. And being on the ridge, our people saw a great number more (of them), coming down by the other bank, which descends along the chain of hills of Baso, in the direction they were going; and our men crossed over the stream, because they did not wish it to be thought that they were afraid of them. This stream has many windings, so that it was necessary to cross it many times before arriving at the foot of the ridge of Baso. And as it was very late, Captain Sarmiento thought that it would be well to remain there all night until morning. And several Indians who had come out from the other part of the river to see him, came to where he was. And among them came one of good appearance; he was decked out with branches like a savage, and had on his head a garland of many scented herbs, of which there are a great quantity in this land, and amongst them he carried sweet-basil, of which there was a great quantity on the mountain; and he carried a heavy club of ebony on his shoulder, and three or four roots of *vinahus* in the other hand; and when he came to Sarmiento, he gave them to him. Another Indian came, who they said was the son of the chief of that country; and they gave him the things that they had brought for barter, and he embraced them, calling them brothers in his language. Then the Indians went away, and the captain and the people he brought with him withdrew to a ridge which was near the river, where there were two huts. The Indians roamed about by the river all night; and when he heard them, in order not to give them an opportunity for making a bold attempt to come up from where they were on watch and do mischief, he ordered those who were on guard to discharge two arquebuses every quarter of an hour, so that the Indians might be afraid, and be aware that our men were not sleeping.

---

[1] Mendaña (p. 120) has *abajo*, which was translated "further down," but Catoira always spells *bajo* and its compound *baxo*. It is evident from the context that Baso was a proper name. A village on the coast near Estrella Bay still bears it.

Next morning he considered that it would not be prudent to go up to the top, because they [the natives] had warned him concerning Ponemonefa, who, they said, was a *caybaco*, that is, great chief; so he gave orders to return to the ships. And coming to the passage of the river, they found some Indians who were cultivating plantains, and they gave him some, and he accepted them and went on. And they saw that there were fires all along the river, below and above. Presently, when Vyle saw that our men were coming, he went with them, and took them by another road, much better and nearer than that by which they had first gone; and when they arrived at his territory there joined him all the Indians, who came with others whom they found there, fitting arrows to their bows; and they began to say, with much haughtiness: "*Afuera! Afuera!*" And when our people saw that, they began to descend with very great caution; and Captain Sarmiento detained the *tauriqui* in conversation, asking why he did not come to the ships, since he was a friend; but he did not answer anything to this, but on the contrary turned away. And when the captain perceived the clamour that they were making, "*Afuera! Afuera!*" and that they were under arms, he ordered two soldiers to seize the *tauriqui*, if he should try to escape, because he believed that he was about to do this;

for the Indians, who were above, and who were following, only waited for their *tauriqui* to separate himself from our men, so that they could shoot arrows at them.

Presently he turned, to try a little diplomacy with the chief, to see whether he could get down to the boat; but he, who was coming down much against his will, wished to escape. And one of the soldiers who had been charged to keep a watch upon him in case he tried to slip away, took hold of the shield he carried hanging from his neck, because there was nothing else (to grasp), but he slipped his head out of the strap, and left it in the soldier's hands, and darted away down the slope of the hill, and they saw him no more. And when they saw that he had fled, they laid hands upon the other Indian, who had come with him, whom they said was the brother of Salacay, the uncle of Vylevanarra; for they thought that as the Indians held this man to be a chief, they would not dare to rebel. It did not succeed any better, since when they saw that their *tauriqui* was free, although they saw that the other one was seized, they attacked our people, shooting many arrows, and our men defended themselves, firing several shots in the air without doing them any harm, thinking that they would flee; but the Indians returned to attack them; and, as our men remained quiet, they attacked them with greater fury, making a great noise. When our men saw that they were not afraid, but pressed them harder, they agreed to attack them, and they made them retreat; and when they saw the savages retreating, they turned to descend; but the Indians came back and shot arrows at them, and they wounded a soldier, who was called H^ro^ Gallo, in the hand with an arrow, which remained sticking in very fast, but our Lord was pleased that it should only be a glance shot. And when our men saw that nothing could be gained unless they attacked them, they turned to go up against them, firing their arquebuses.

And as they hit some of them, they [the Indians] did not think that it was prudent to wait, so they retired, and our men followed them. They found an Indian knocked down by a shot from an arquebus, and he tried to rise, but could not, so Pedro Sarmiento finished him off with a sword, and all the Indians fled. And our men burned a *guaca* and one of their temples; and they came bringing Vyle's uncle prisoner, and they travelled about 7 leagues in all. And on the road by which they went they found no food but cocoanuts and *vinahu*, nor did they see any Indians with any kind of metal. Whilst they were engaged in battle with the Indians, the people on board the ships heard the firearms; and, as a brother of Vyle's had come, and had said that his brother was going with our men to Baso, and the time had not yet come for their return, the General became alarmed, and sent the boats to the port to which they should come. And when the boats arrived, our men were on the shore at the water's edge, and they embarked, and gave an account of all that had happened to them, which is that which has been related. They had understood from the Indians that the land in the interior is thickly inhabited, and that they had arms, and that there was water in the whole length of the river. The General was much concerned, since they had broken the peace with the natives after they had been entertained, and he endeavoured to restore peace with them, giving them to understand what was our intent, and why we had come to that land.

The uncle of the *tauriqui* remained a prisoner for three days; and when the General saw that they did not come to seek him, and that no Indian was to be seen, nor any canoe on the sea, he determined to send him back, so that the natives might understand we did not wish to hurt him. And he sent Captain Sarmiento with thirty soldiers to take him back, in order that he should bring them again to friendship with us. And he ordered them to give the Indians some things which the soldiers had brought away when they took him, and which were worth very little. At the moment of his departure, understanding the kindness which was being done to him in setting him at liberty, he came to the General and embraced him, and wished to kiss his feet (*capillos*).[1] And when the Indians saw that our men were going to his residence, they raised a great war-cry and sounded their conches, and gave great shouts. Our men went up without their making any resistance—although it could very easily have been done if they had been skilful in warfare—and found them so frightened and ready to fly, that had they not called to them, saying that they were friends, they would certainly have done so, as they were frightened at the havoc lately made by the guns. And although Captain Sarmiento called to them with much persuasiveness, they would not come, until he took the Indian, whom they had not yet seen, by the hand, and told them to come for him, but they neither wished nor dared to come. Then he set the uncle free, so that he might go to them. And before he went the captain and some of the soldiers embraced him, and he them, giving them thanks. When he arrived where the Indians were, they received him with much rejoicing; and as they embraced him, some of them cried for joy, seeing that our men had done them this good deed, and in acknowledgment thereof, they told our men to sit down, and they would bring them something to eat. And so they did, and brought them a great quantity of cocoanuts and *vinahus*, and they placed them about a stone's-throw from where they stood, for our men to take it from thence, because they did not dare to come near them. And when

---

[1] *Capillo* is the lining of the toe of the shoe, and "feet" is therefore a free translation. It is, however, not uncommon in the Pacific to kiss the feet of a superior in token of entreaty or self-abasement.

Captain Sarmiento turned to call to them, telling them in their language to come, and not be afraid, they asked him to order his men to extinguish the fuses of the arquebuses, and that then they would come. And he ordered them to extinguish some, to induce them to come. About six of them came, but when some of our men rose up, they went off, fleeing like deer. And they pressed the captain much to order the men to sit down and put out all the fuses, and so they remained awhile with them.

They returned to the ship that day without doing any damage, although they could have taken many cocoanuts and *vinahus*. And the Indians promised to return to the ships, and to bring food, but they did not do so, and it was understood that it was because they were afraid. As these Indians did not come to the ships, and it was prudent to obtain their friendship, and in order that the people should not be idle while the brigantine was being built, it was arranged on Wednesday, the day of San Matthias (which they reckon the 24th of February), to send them in the boats along the coast, both up and down, to reconnoitre and find out what the Indians had, and whether they would be friends. And for this purpose he [the General] sent Gravyel Muñoz and Diego Davila up and down the coast, with a dozen soldiers with each of them. Gravyel Muñoz went about four leagues down the coast [westward] but he did not find any population of Indians along the sea coast nor did he meet anyone, only he discovered a large river, and he said that he had found the tracks of some deer[1] on the shore. He returned the same day, and gave this account. He gave the river the name of San Matia.

Diego Davila went other 20 leagues along the coast [eastward], having only one day allowed before he had to return. He found a good population of Indians and spoke to them, asking them to be friends. He made them signs of peace, but being somewhat fearful of the arquebuses, of which they had heard already, and of the execution done by them, they were afraid and did not dare to come to our people. And when they told them in their language not to be afraid, for they were not going to do them any harm, the natives came, and our people embraced them, and they gave them cocoanuts, and they promised to come on board the ship; but they did not keep their word. They saw that the coast above was inhabited, and so they returned that day at nightfall, and brought this account. They found a small river, to which they gave the name of Diego Davila.

---

[1] Probably wild boars.

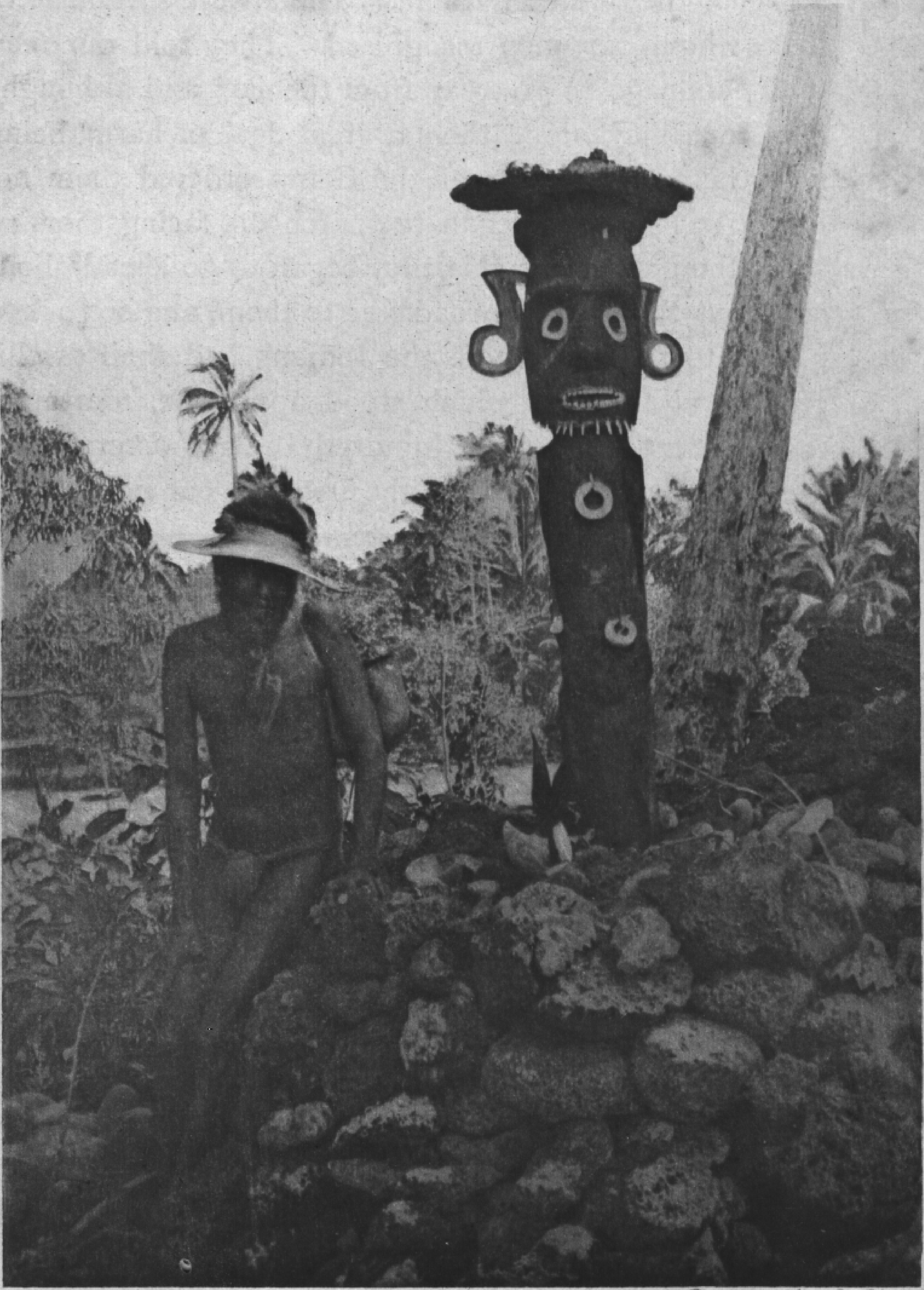
Having been here so many days, the General thought that it was not right to go out of Puerto de la Estrella without knowing what there was in that district where the chain of mountains was. And for this reason, and because, according to the account brought by Pedro Sarmiento, there were people in the interior, in order to satisfy himself on this point, having determined to send to His Majesty and to His Lordship the true account of this land, the General sent Pedro de Ortega Valencia, Master of the Camp, with thirty arquebusiers, and fifteen common soldiers and fifteen baggage-boys to carry the food, to ascend this chain of mountains, and bring back an account of everything.

They left on the 4th of March, with eight days' leave for going and returning. On the day of their departure they marched 5 or 6 leagues, on a very bad road, according to their account full of swamps and mountains, and along the same river which Sarmiento crossed when he went into the interior. On account of the thick bush (*arcabuco*),[1] they were obliged to cross it more than fifteen times before they arrived at one of the huts near the one further on, which Pedro Sarmiento had reached, and there they slept that night. As they were marching along this river, and had reached the middle of one of the fords, some Indians came out to them, making signs of peace, calling to our men to cross further on, and saying they would point out to them a place where they might sleep, if they would go with them. And when they came to the Indians the Master of the Camp embraced them. About one hundred of them were assembled, and more came up and joined those by the river, near the huts which I have mentioned. They came across three women who came out to see them, but they fled away immediately. Our people lodged there, and the natives brought them cocoanuts, *vinahus*, and roots, which they said were all of little account. The Master of the Camp gave them some things in exchange, and was very friendly, showing that he was much pleased with them. Although there was knavery and treason underneath, the Indians did not do them any harm, and did not touch any of their food, nor anything else. He had a little very friendly conversation with them, and when night came all the natives went away.

---

[1] Throughout this MS. the word for "bush" is spelt *arcabuco*, while that for "arquebus" is spelt *arcabuzo*.

Next morning they departed from thence, and they began to climb a steep ascent, caused by a cleft (*cochilla*) at the foot of the mountains, very stony and steep, on the top of which the natives had their huts. And journeying up to the top, they came upon thirty Indians who had sugar-cane, and gave some to them. And presently they began to walk ahead of our people, and they understood from that that they wished us to go back. And going up a little further they heard many *coflis* and other music, which sounded like an organ. And as they were getting to the top of the cutting, before actually arriving at the summit, when they were very much fatigued by the heat, there came upon them more than one hundred Indians, all armed for war, uttering loud shouts and saying, "*Afuera! Afuera!*" which they had learned from the Indians of Vyle, for they were all friends. There were several of them there whom our men recognised. They told our men in their language to go away from thence; and although our men could have done them a great deal of harm, being so near them, the Master of the Camp ordered them not to fire. And so they began to march on, facing them; and when the natives saw this, they began to go ahead, shouting out; but they left the road free to them, and so [our men] got up to the top, where the Indians had their dwellings. And by all the huts, which stood apart one from another, they saw more than five hundred Indians assembled with their weapons. Arriving at the first huts, our men quartered themselves in them. And some of the natives came to speak to the Master of the Camp, making signs of peace, and he received them, embracing them and calling them brothers in their language; and he told them to call their *tauriqui*, whom he wished to see; so they brought him, and when he came to where the Master of the Camp was standing, the Master of the Camp embraced him, and spoke in a very friendly manner, and made him signs that they were not going to do them any harm; and he asked them to bring them water, for they were thirsty, and our men did not know where it was; but he would not do so, although he asked him several times, and very beseechingly. And although he ordered his Indians to bring it, he did so apathetically and unwillingly, and therefore they would not do it. Seeing that they would not do this for good treatment, the Master of the Camp threatened them, saying that if they did not do it he would have to shoot them; and in order that they might understand the harm that the arquebuses could do, he ordered them to fire four shots at a tree; and when it was seen that they struck it, and that the



Printing Arts Cº Lᵈ sc.

A tomb (with native wearing a sunshade)

shot went right into it, the *tauriqui* was afraid, and wished to slip away from the Master of the Camp, and go to his men who were under arms, and the Master of the Camp stood up before him and called him *y ta palu*, which means brother. Then the *tauriqui* asked for his club from an Indian who carried it. He moved slowly away from the Master of the Camp, looking at his people; and when the Master of the Camp saw that he wanted to escape, he was afraid that he would give battle if he did so; therefore he began to conciliate him, and embraced him, calling him brother; but for all this he tried to escape, and slipped round behind the Master of the Camp,[1] who turned round after the *tauriqui*, and put out his hand, and seized him by the arm, and held him. And the Indians who were near saw it, and made ready to attack our men; but when they saw that their chief was taken they dared not. And our men seeing that at about a gun-shot further on there were other better and more numerous huts, they marched on to them, taking the *tauriqui* prisoner. A little before they reached the huts there came out against our men about one hundred Indian warriors, all equipped for battle, one of whom seemed braver than the rest, and he put himself in front of the natives. He was streaked and daubed with white, and carried a club in his hand; and challenging our men he began making the signs used in war and in attack, which were dancing and making grimaces and other furious gestures, threatening our men. The Master of the Camp ordered his men not to fire upon them, because they had not attacked them, although they stood ready for it. And as the natives saw that our men faced them, and came towards them, they did not dare to take the offensive, nor to go to the place where their *tauriqui* was bound a prisoner, nor even to threaten our people; and so they left their houses and the path, and fled to the mountains; and presently, whilst they were lodging in the village, where they slept that night, an Indian, whom we called Henriquez, because he had changed names with Don Hernando Henriquez, the Alferez-General, came to them. He was one of Vyle's men, and he was a great rascal and traitor. He came to the Master of the Camp with much effrontery, as the man had done who had made gestures of hostility when they went up to the village; and he asked them to show him the *tauriqui*, and he consented; but, as he entered very defiantly, for his effrontery they tied him up by the *tauriqui*, to keep him company. And they passed that night there without the natives making any disturbance.

---

[1] The favourite position for attack is to get behind the intended victim.

Early next day, they began to march up the chain of mountains, by a road that they found very difficult, so much so that it was necessary for them to drag themselves up by their hands, and they found it very swampy. And several natives followed behind them, and Gravyel Muñoz ordered them to stop with four fusiliers, whom he ordered to fire in the air to frighten them, because the Indians had shot arrows at the vanguard, and had wounded a soldier, named Alonzo Myn, in the leg. And when our men fired, they fled into the bush. And while our men were lodging in some of the huts that they found there, the Indians shot some arrows, without our men seeing them. Whilst they were shooting arrows, before our men had touched any of them, Henriquez loosed himself from a soldier who had him tied up, cutting his bonds, and plunged into the bush, so rugged and dangerous that it was not fit for any of the soldiers to plunge in after him, although the one who had held him wished to do so, and would certainly have killed himself. Our men fired some shots at the Indians, whom they saw there, and who were shooting arrows at them, and wounded two of them; but of our people none came out wounded. Presently, through two clefts of broken ground that were there, they saw the sea on the other side of the chain, and it seemed to surround the land, for which reason they thought that it was an island, although they could not be certain. And then he [the Master of the Camp] ordered them to go back to the *tauriqui* whom they had taken and placed in a hut, and ask him by signs whether it was a continent or an island; and the *tauriqui* understood well what they were asking him, and made him understand by clear signs, for he made a circle on the ground, saying that what was inside was land, and all round it was sea, which they called *sina*, and the land *caba*.[1] And they slept there that night, and towards dawn the *tauriqui* slipped away from the soldier who had charge of him, to whom the Master [of the Camp] had consigned him, because this soldier had quarrelled in good earnest with a comrade from whom the other Indian had escaped, and so much in earnest that they would have come to blows; and the Master of the Camp thought that on that account he would be more careful of him, if he put him under his charge. But it so happened that he got away through a hole, or small door, that the soldiers had not seen.

The next morning, for greater satisfaction, the Master of the Camp, in order to see whether the place he was in was an island or a continent, which was what we wanted to know (for we thought that it must be a continent, because the coast we saw was so extensive that we could not see the end of it), and as Pedro Sarmiento had reported that he had heard from the Indians that a long way inland there was a great chief who had a great many people, and wishing to clear up the doubt, the Master of the Camp sent Gasper de Colmenates, and eight soldiers with him, to a very high ridge, which was 2 leagues from where he stood, whence he would be able to see more clearly what the land was like, and whether the sea surrounded it, as the *tauriqui* had said. Arriving at the top, they saw the sea very clearly on the north side and on the south side, but they could not see it on the west side. And so they returned to where the Master of the Camp was waiting, and Colmenates gave him an account of it. And so, having seen that it was no use going further that day, because they could see [the sea] breaking on the other side of the chain, they began to descend on their way back to the ships, in order to lodge in the huts where they had slept before they came up. And when they got back to them, many Indians came out from behind them, and began to shoot at them with arrows. They did our people no harm, because they shot at them from a long distance, nor did [our men] do any to them, although they fired a few shots in the air to frighten them, the Master of the Camp having ordered them not to fire so as to kill them. They slept there that night, and no more Indians appeared, or molested them. They lived upon palmettos and *vinahus* and other roots, which the natives call *pano*.[1]

---

[1] See the vocabulary in the Introduction.

Next morning, they left this place and began to descend by a very bad road. And, when the natives saw them, they began to attack them from the rear, shooting arrows in such a manner that they annoyed our people without their being able to retaliate, because they were on a ridge and passing through the bush, and they could neither fire a shot at them, nor go up to them, nor descend. And so they wounded two of our people with two arrows. The one was Colmenates, and the other Alonzo Myn,[1] and they shot at them all the way down to the river. And as our men were coming down the hill, they set fire to all the huts and temples that they met with, in order to detain them; knowing that they would wait to put out the fire, and so allow them to get down. But though they set them on fire, it was useless, because they burned so rapidly. When our men arrived at the river, the Indians began to shoot with arrows on all sides, where our people could not see to shoot at them on account of the bush, and although they fired some arquebus shots, they hit nobody; and when the Indians saw that, they were emboldened and pressed us harder, so that an arrow which was shot from a respectable distance penetrated a shield, more than four fingers' breadth on the other side. They ran up the mountain with such agility that they were like demons. And when our people came down to the river below, they saw some Indians, who, after they had shot away all the arrows that they had, threw stones at them, and when they found no stones, earth, and when there was no earth, their bows; and when they had thrown everything they had they spat at us and jeered at us, turning their hinder-parts. And as our men came marching down to the river below, a soldier saw an Indian on the beach behind a large tree, and when he came out to shoot an arrow at him, he gave him an arquebus shot in the head, and it went right through it; and as he fell, some soldiers ran up to him and moved him on to a bank in order that the rest of the Indians might see him. And at length they crossed the river; and they [the Indians] shot at them from the early morning till two o'clock in the afternoon, when they all got across. And at length, when they were going up a ridge towards the dwelling of Vylevanarra, the Indians stopped, and our men halted to eat, because they had not been able to do so before, on account of the haste with which the Indians had pressed them. After they had eaten, they set out, and at nightfall they arrived at some huts a league and a half before arriving at Vyle's dwelling, where they passed the night. They did not find any Indians there, nor see any sign of them.

---

[1] Muñoz thought that *palmetto* meant the fruit of the fan palm, but there being no edible variety of this palm in the Solomons, it is possible that the banana was intended. *Pano* may be a mistake for *pana*, the small, prickly-vined yam, though they seem to have first met with this root later in the Gela group; *vinahu* is the taro.

---

[1] An abbreviation for Martyn, or Martin, the name given by Gallego, who adds that he subsequently died of tetanus.

Next day, in the morning, they went from thence, and they began to go up to Vanarra's dwelling, where they found the Indians were waiting for them; for, although they had been found siding with the people of Baso in the battle, they had gone on to protect their houses, fearing lest our men should burn them, as they had those behind. When our men arrived, they had placed in the road as many cocoanuts as there were people, with which they wished to make peace, and they made signs that our men should sit down and eat them; and when they had done so they brought water, more from fear than from friendship; and, although the Master of the Camp called them, in their language, brothers,[1] showing them much friendship, they would not come to him, and they put the water near that our men might go for it. And, although the Master of the Camp had intended to take some food from them, yet seeing that they came in peace, he did not do so, because our intention was always to avoid giving them offence. From thence they went down to the ships, and they all arrived very tired and wet, and covered with mud from the bad roads. The Master of the Camp [said] that the Indians had given their word that they would see us, and come to the ships and bring food. Our men said that they had found some temples, and snakes, lizards, and scorpions in them, and in each one they found two or three *sabandijas*, which they keep in their nests in the wood of the temples, and they place food for them. We understood that they worshipped them; but our men also found them in their houses, near the spot where they made fire. They hung as many of these as they found on a stick, where the Indians could see them, and they sang at night, differently from other snakes (*culebras*), and like birds. One of them bit Francisco Garcia Tarifeno, a soldier, who put his foot upon it, but it did him no harm.[1]

---

[1] Using the word *tapulu*, which, signifying "we two," scarcely conveyed his meaning to the natives.

They saw among the natives many who were graceful, of good figure, and active, some white, fair-haired, and well-featured, amongst whom was one of fifteen years, the son of the *tauriqui* of Baso, who was good-looking and of a good figure; his hair was like gold, and there is no lady who has her hair so well-dressed and frizzed. And there were many others like them, some like mulattoes and some like negroes. When the Master of the Camp was about to leave for this march into the said range of mountains, he asked the General to send with him a priest to enlighten him as to what he ought to do for the unburdening of his conscience; and the Father, Fray Francisco de Galvez, sent the Father, Fray Juan de Torres, whom he charged strongly, that in all which should happen there with the natives he should have regard for their welfare, and for all that was in accordance with Christianity and our consciences; and that he should enlighten them as to all that they should do, and contrive to secure peace and harmony among them all. He went, and when he returned, he said that he was much edified with the good Christian purpose and order which the Master of the Camp had shown in all that occurred.

---

[1] No explanation of this puzzling passage is quite satisfactory Dr. Welchman has seen the little green-tree frogs kept as pets in the houses of south-east Ysabel for the sake of their piping at night, and he himself has mistaken their note for the call of a night bird. They are also tied to sticks by the leg, as described. But these frogs do not bite, and it is difficult to understand how they could be compared with *culebras*.

Whilst the Master of the Camp was in Baso it was understood that the workmen, who were building the brigantine, should make haste, and not lose time, the General giving every assistance. One day, whilst they were hearing Mass in the morning, some soldiers saw eight large canoes, brightly painted, and full of people, near a point which bounds this harbour towards the east. And the General ordered his men to remain quiet to see what they did, and they watched them whilst they were on their knees, hearing Mass. These canoes came towards the spot where we were, and presently we saw seven others, which came in the same manner, all the people being in their war-paint, with their bows and lances of palm and ebony in their hands; and when the soldiers saw them, they told the General. And they came on, the first approaching us, and the others behind them; and when they had met together, they sent two of them to the ships, and the rest came towards the land, where the arquebusiers were. And one of these would have fired upon them with the arquebuses, but the General took his from him, and went to the water's edge; and the Indians called to him, saying "*tauriqui*," and asked him to embark with them to go to the ship; and when Pedro Sarmiento saw their signals, he said that the General ought to embark in the boat, in order that the Indians should not think he was afraid; but he would not do so, because the workmen were on shore working at the brigantine, and there were but few soldiers on shore. And so he remained with them, although his decision was disapproved of by some and approved of by others. Whilst this was taking place, the Indians talked to our people, calling out to us, and we to them. And when the General saw them coming, he withdrew apart under an awning, and made the people stand aside. And presently one of the principal of them approached, standing up, and he held up a quarter of a man, which he brought in his canoe, and showed it, and he appeared to be explaining that it was a gift to the Master of the Camp, who had killed one of their Indians, and that these natives had descended by the river which Diego Davila had discovered. When the General saw it, he came out, and the Indian took some roots of *vinahus*, and held them up with the quarter of the man that he had brought, and showing them, said in his language that they should eat them, saying "*Nalea!*" "*Nalea!*" which in their language means "to eat." And presently another Indian threw himself into the sea, and took the quarter of flesh and the *vinahus*, but he dared not come out of the water, and called out to them to come into the water for it. And the General wished the Indian to come ashore, but he, when he saw that they were coming for the quarter, returned to his canoe, and they threw it back into the sea, and he took it into the canoe again, and would not come ashore. And the General ordered a negro to go in, but not to take what the Indian had brought until he told him to come out. And the negro went in, carrying a knife in his hand, but the Indian was afraid of it, and turned back; and the General ordered the negro to leave the knife which he had in his hand, and go in without it. And the Indian waited for him, and held out his arm, and gave him the quarter of the man, and the negro did not wish to take it, and the Indian threw it to him, and went away. And then the negro took the *vinahu* and the quarter of the man, and brought it out on shore, and we all saw it done. It was the right arm, with all the shoulder. It seemed to be a boy, who had a small hand and a thin arm. We were all struck with great wonder and pity, to see so much cruelty and so strange a thing, such as we had never seen nor heard of; for though many people had seen them[1] eating human flesh, yet no one had ever heard of it being offered to anybody. When the Indians saw that we were astonished at it, they came back to tell us to eat it. And some of the soldiers wished to fire upon them, but the General prevented them, saying that these people did not know good from evil. And the soldiers said that they knew it perfectly well, because they went away from their own lands to look for other Indians to eat. And the General appeased them, saying: "Christian brethren, it is for this reason, that before we make war upon them we should show them that they ought not to do these deeds; until then, all the harm that we shall do to them would be upon our own consciences." Presently he ordered them to bury the quarter of the man, and directed all to stand aside, so that the Indians might see it. And after they had dug a hole, he ordered a negro to hold up the piece in his hand, and turning to them, show it to them. And they all saw what we had done; and they said: "*teo nalea*," that is to say, that we did not eat it. They were standing so near that they [our men] heard it. And presently we buried the piece before them all, to all of which they paid great attention. When they saw what we had done, they went away with an injured look, bending forward over their canoes; and when they had gone a little way from us, they sounded their *coſtis*; and one-half of them joined together, and the other half went towards the ships. At this time a soldier who had been up to the hill to see whether there were more Indians, came in, and he said "No;" and when the General saw that they had separated, he went on board, and with him Don Hernando Henriquez, and Pedro Sarmiento, and other soldiers, leaving a guard for those who were building the brigantine. And when he arrived at the ship, he found there two canoes full, talking with the people of the *Capitana*, and seven others lay apart from them; and, as our men came up, they went away and joined the others; and although they called to them, they would not come, and they called to our people; and the General steered the boat towards them. And when he came up to them, they separated one from the other, and the General steered for the canoe in which the *tauriqui* was, and gave chase to it; and the *tauriqui* made signs to him to go back, and he turned back to the ship. And in the meantime Juan Henriquez and I were in the ship, with the guns pointed, so that if the Indians did anything wrong, we might fire on them with the cannon. And the Indians went to a small island, which is at the entrance of this bay, which they call Cuia.[1] And after a little we saw that they had made a great fire on it, and we suspected that it was for eating what remained of their gift. And afterwards it became known through Vyle's Indians that this was true. This Indian Chief was called Bene. His territory lies to the west of this port. He could bring about one hundred and ten Indians, well equipped with arms. They are of a better disposition than those which we had seen up to this time. He had just been making war more than 20 leagues from his territory.[2]

---

[1] *I.e.*, Indians in other countries. The Spaniards had not as yet seen cannibalism in the Solomon Islands.

The Indians of Vylevanarra having seen that our people did them no harm when they passed by his dwelling, as they had done to those of Tiarabaso, whose houses and temples they had burnt, two canoes came on Tuesday, the 12th of March, and they brought cocoanuts and *vinahus;* and they made signs of peace, saying that Vyle wished to be our friend and brother, and that he wished to come and see the General, and, that in order to confirm this, he wished to leave an Indian in the ship. And so they did, and they asked the General for a soldier to take to their chief, whereupon Francisco Garcia Tarifeno, a married man of Los Reyes, said that he would like to go there, and that the General might be certain that they would do him no harm, and asked for permission; but the General would not give it, for he did not consider them to have a good reputation. Whilst this was happening, a lad called Trejo, belonging to a soldier, put himself into a canoe with an Indian, and, asking permission, began to paddle; and the General, having seen it, allowed him to go, although protesting that he should not do so; and the boy said that he wished to venture, since the other Indian was to remain in the ship. And when the soldiers saw him go they thought it wrong, saying that the General was not right in letting the lad go, for the Indians would kill him. And the General heard them, and said that those who were serving His Majesty had many dangers before them, and should not murmur, that they were to try by all means to make these Indians friends, since they wished it and left hostages. The soldiers said that if it had been a rich it would be well enough; and the General answered, tha whether the land were rich or poor they had to do what His Majesty ordered, and make peace with all the inhabitants of it, for it was his will that they should do so.

---

[1] Hakelaki Island.

[2] This Bene is not to be confused with Benebonefa, the chief of St. George's Island. Perhaps he came from the archipelago at the western extremity of Ysabel Island.

Returning to what happened there to the boy. He was at Vyle's dwelling that day and night; and the following day the General ordered a shot to be fired, that he might understand that he was to come back; and the boy heard it, and told the *tauriqui* that they wanted him to go back. And the Indians asked him if the report of the gun was a signal for him, and he said "Yes." Then they brought him, and when the General arrived he asked him how they had treated him. He said that if he had been in his father's house he could not have been treated better. They had given him to eat of the best that they had, and they were much pleased with him, ...[1] and they made the best bed they could for him to sleep on, where he slept as soundly as possible, and in every way they tried to treat him well, and they talked with him for a long time at night, and asked him many things. He came back well contented with the good treatment he had received. The General and all were equally delighted at it, for it seemed to us that this time peace was really confirmed between us. He told the General that the *tauriqui* told him that he desired to be his friend and his brother. And the Indian that remained as hostage was Diabolico. He was very happy in the ship. The General made much of him for the sake of the friendship he desired, because we did not wish to have any rupture with them through doing them harm. He told us what we desired to know, telling us the names of the chiefs of the island, and the food and other things that they had.

The Indians who brought the boy said that the *tauriqui* Vyle was at war with another *tauriqui* called Meta, whose dwelling is above this Puerto de la Estrella, and that he had killed three of their Indians and eaten them; and Vyle asked whether our people would assist him to avenge himself, and fight with them. In order to please them and make friends with them, that they might be made to obey His Majesty, the General offered to assist them against their enemies, according to the instructions he had from Your Lordship. And they went away much pleased to tell their *tauriqui*, and, when they went to tell him, the Indian said that he had been treated well on the ship (*en lancio*).[1] Then, on the 14th of the said month, the *tauriqui* sent a very handsome lad, his nephew, to the ship, to go with the General; and he received him kindly and embraced him, and ordered some clothes to be given to him. And he graciously received three other Indians in the same manner, and for five days they did not wish to leave the ship; and, when the General went on shore, they took up their weapons and said in their language that they wished to become his servants, that is to say, *natlonys*, and to go to Castille or to Peru.

---

[1] Here occurs the following passage:—"y le enseñaban todas sus mugeres y le preguntaba si queria alguna dellas y como les dixo que no, y escupio dellas, se ademyraron y le enseñaron como avya de usar con ellas, y a todo les dixo que no, y que voloya el rostro para no les myrar,"

At this time the brigantine was nearly finished, and it seemed to the General and to all that, in order not to mislead the natives, it would be as well to provide ourselves with an interpreter (for as yet we had not got one), because they would not let us take one peaceably; for we were going to send men to seek out Meta, who had not desired our friendship, and not to annoy Vyle, who had again become our friend.

This Vyle sent his uncle, who was called Seseboco, with other chiefs, to visit the General, and to ask him whether he would aid them, as he had sent to say he would. The General was surprised that they wished for proof so quickly, and told them that so it should be done, and they said that he should send a boat next day to carry their people, because they had very few canoes, and the General told them, with much pleasure, that so it should be done, that they might not take us for a deceitful race; and with this they took leave that day.

Then the General called the Master of the Camp and some old soldiers. He asked them their opinion on what ought to be done to discharge our duty to these natives;

---

[1] *En lancio*=*en la nao*, or *en el navio.*

since, if harm came to Meta through our going there, it would revert upon Vyle, and he would eat his Indians; and, in accordance with the advice of all, he sent the boat, in order that he might keep his word with them. About forty Indians came in it; but Vyle did not come, and at his failing to come the General was angry, and said that, as Vyle had not come, he did not wish our people to go against Meta. And his uncle, who was called Seseboco, who came with them, said that, ever since Sarmiento had fought his Indians, Vyle was very much afraid; that he desired our friendship, and had asked for our word to secure it.

And then, upon the advice of the Master of the Camp and some soldiers who were asked, he told them to go back; that our men would go to Meta with the Master of the Camp, and that we had no need of their aid; that only six Indians should remain with him, to go with him and guide him to Meta's dwelling. They did so, and Seseboco remained with them; they slept on board, because the Master of the Camp was to start early the next morning. And it was agreed that, even if Vyle should come, he should be told the same thing, that he should not put his people in danger, for our men were sufficient; and as some of them were going and would see us seize the interpreters, and afterwards he (Vyle) would see them prisoners, he would suppose and would be told that we had taken them for his benefit, in order that we might perform our duty to him.

The Master of the Camp departed on this expedition on Thursday, the 18th of the month, with twenty arquebusiers and fifteen soldiers, and four of the Indians that remained; for of the six that remained two were kept on board. They went in the boats, because they went from a point to a beach. And when the Master of the Camp wished to send the boats back, the Indians told him not to do so, because they would have to cross an arm of the sea in them to arrive at Meta's dwelling, and it could be reached in no other way. And when the Master of the Camp saw that, he ordered the pilot, Juan Henriquez, to return with one, in order that the ships might not be without a boat, and the pilot, Pedro Res, to put to sea with the other; and because it could not contain all the people, some went by the shore.

They clothed the Indians they took with them, in order that Meta might not recognise them. And they began marching on along the beach, sometimes by water because of the thick bush, and sometimes by a bad road, and through many streams that ran into the sea. Many heavy showers fell, and at the end of six leagues, which they had traversed before evening, when they were wondering where they should lodge, as it did not cease raining, they saw a hut on an islet which was near. The Master of the Camp, seeing none elsewhere, resolved to pass over thither in the boat with his men. They went over in two boat-loads, and when they got there they found it so small that it would only hold a few of them. They made a fire, and some shelters of boughs so that the people might be protected.[1] It rained so heavily all night that they could not light the fire, and they were soaked through and covered with mud. Their food also got so wet that they could not touch it. They found many palms and palmettos, which they ate.

Next morning they left the islet, and crossed the arm of the sea of which the Indians had told them; and when they had nearly crossed over, they saw four or five canoes with Indians coming towards them. They called to them, but they would not come until they were joined by twenty-eight others, in which came about one hundred Indians.

---

[1] Mendaña's interrupted narrative recommences at this point (see p. 121).

Our men would not wait for them[1] till they reached the beach, and they came there, but would not disembark. The Master of the Camp called to them, telling them that they were brothers, and that, if they came on shore, he would do them no harm. Whilst this was going on, our people kept the Indians, whom they had as guides, in concealment, thinking that those that had come to them were from Meta; but, when they saw them, they told the Master of the Camp that they were *natlonys*, that is to say, vassals of Vyle; and when the Master of the Camp understood this, he sent them out to speak to those that came in the canoes. And when they recognised them, they were much delighted, and told them that our men were going to kill Meta, which pleased them much. And when they disembarked, the Master of the Camp embraced them, and gave them presents, and they thanked him and gave him some food. And the Indians who were with our people began to march on along the beach. And they saw some of Meta's Indians coming out of the bush to look at them, and spy where they were going to. They approached his dwelling, which stands on high ground beyond a clearing, but they could not reach it that night because it was then late.

Many Indians went along the beach, and when they saw that our men came towards them, calling out, they fled away into the bush. And when it was seen that our men could not reach his dwelling, and that the Indians would not wait for them, they resolved to encamp near the shore, but there was not a convenient spot. Then the Master of the Camp thought it better to send on some soldiers along the beach to look for a more convenient place for encamping. They found a more convenient place; and, going forward to reconnoitre it, a soldier saw an Indian come unwarily out of the bush, laden with a little *vinahu*. He attacked him, thinking that, as he was alone, there was a greater chance of taking him, and the Indian fled into the sea, but it was of no use, because at last he seized him ; and whilst he was in the water endeavouring to escape, so that the soldier should not be able to take him, a dog that they had brought with them attacked him, and seized him by the arm, and then he kept quiet, and they took the dog off him. They bound him, and brought him to the place where the Master of the Camp had remained.

---

[1] Mendaña says that they waited for them.

They slept there that night, and passed as bad a night as the first, on account of the heavy downpours ; and they could not keep a light, for whenever they struck one, the water put it out, so they were very wet and tired. They found many cocoanuts and palmettos there, which they ate, for they had nothing else.

Next morning the Master of the Camp went with twenty-five soldiers to see a large tree that they had told him of. There were many cocoanuts hanging on it, and it was near the place where they had encamped ; and he ordered them to knock them down ; there were about two hundred, and they gathered them all, and put them into the boat. And after they had finished picking them up, when the Indians perceived that they took the food, and did them no other damage, about eighty of them came and brought our people some roots of *vinahus*, and the Master of the Camp received them very well, showing them much friendship, and he called to them with kind words, calling them brothers, and took them to where they had encamped, and as he had orders only to take five or six Indians for interpreters, he did not wish to do them any more harm ; and so he took four Indians, one of whom was the son of the *tauriqui* Meta. And as they took them straight to the shelter, holding them by the hand, it appeared to them that, as there was much talking going on, they would try to free themselves and escape. Then some of our men seized them, and threw them down on the ground, and bound them. And as most of those that came, armed with arrows and lances and clubs, saw this, they came out. And our people stood on their guard in case they should attack them; they did not dare to do so, but gradually turned away, although the son of the *tauriqui* cried out loudly when they were binding him, calling on his father, Meta, to help him. Presently, after binding them, they put them into the boat, and the Master of the Camp ordered Gravyel Muñez to embark in it with some soldiers, to defend it, in case any canoes should come out. And they were to go to the ships, while he and the rest would come by the shore. The boat with the Indians and cocoanuts arrived before the Master of the Camp. They said that as they were coming along by night, the Indians had got loose, though they could not tell how, for they had tied them up very securely with their hands behind them, and that when they noticed it they tied them up again.[1] The General ordered the cocoanuts to be divided amongst the ships' companies. The Master of the Camp arrived later with his people, for in returning to the ships they were delayed two days longer, having only been allowed four days to go and return in; and because their food had got so wet, they had had no food but cocoanuts and palmettos for three days; which are not sustaining food. They all arrived fatigued, but in good health.

When the four Indians who had gone with them arrived, they asked them to give them the other four Indians, saying that they wished to take them for their *tauriqui*, Vyle, to eat. The General ordered them to go and ask him to come to the ships, and told them that he would give them up: with this they went away much pleased. Next day he sent to say that he had not been able to come, but that he would come without fail on the following day; and in the morning he sent six Indians to ask them to send him the boat in which he and his *natlonys* (vassals) would come; and the General ordered it to go, and some soldiers in it, and thirty Indians came in the boat. And he [Vyle] sent to say that he would come presently; and he assembled eight canoes of Indians, and, after a little time, he came very grandly, with many white armlets, made of bone, upon his arms, with a large plate of the same hanging from his neck, and bracelets of very small deer's teeth, and very small stones, like coral,[1] which he wore on his arms and legs; and, although he was a savage, we marvelled at the dignity and gravity with which he came, for he was seated in his canoe. After his *natlonys,* that is to say vassals, had arrived and had come on board, he sat gazing awhile, his hands placed against his cheek, without saying a word; and, although the General called to him, he did not answer, and when we all laughed at seeing his gravity, wishing himself to laugh, he hid his mouth with his hand with much reserve, and gradually he came alongside the ship. And when he would not come on board the General called him, and then he asked whether they intended to kill him, for he was much afraid, and they answered "No," and that the General was his friend and his brother, and that he should come on board. He ordered his brother, who came behind him in a canoe, to take off all the bracelets that he wore on his arm, and the plate that he wore on his neck, and he made him wash them well; and, when he had finished washing them, he sent to tell the General to order all the people to stand on one side, and to sit down, for he wished to come on board; and when the General had ordered the people to stand on one side and had sat down on his chair, he came up with all gravity, and stood on the side of the ship, and remained awhile, looking at the ship. And when he saw that there were a great many people under the awning,[1] he went round outside the rigging by the channels to near where the General was, and sat down near him without speaking. Then he made the sign of the cross with his hands, and looked up to heaven, raising his hands. And he put the medallion on the General's neck, and the bracelets on one arm; and he did it all slowly, without speaking, and it was understood that he was making a great present; for they think a great deal of them, and no one wears them except the chiefs. And when he thought that it was time to speak, he said that he was afraid that they would kill him, and for that reason he had not come to the ship; but that from thenceforth he would come and bring food, and that he wished to be the General's friend, and that his Indians should be *natlonys*, and that between them they would be Lords of the land. The General asked him who was the principal *tauriqui* of that land, and he answered "*Go*,"[2] that is to say, you; and afterwards "*Ara*,"[3] that is to say, I; and they would both be "*ytapalus*,"[4] that is to say, brothers, and that all his vassals should be "*natlonys*,"[5] and should all serve him; and, as they had said before that Our Lord was in Heaven and Lord of it, and of the earth and of the sea, and of all things created, and that the King of Castille was a great lord, and great in all the earth, he asked the General to explain. The General said that God was *Caybaco*, that is to say, Great Lord, and *bocru*, of many things, and that He was the King of Heaven and Earth, and the sea, moon, and stars, and everything; and that the King of Castille was lord of the land, and that we were all his vassals. Then he made a gesture, which was not at all like that of a savage: he stretched out his hand in the air, the palm downwards, signifying that it was the Heaven, and with a finger of the other hand he made a sign above it, pointing upwards, asking whether God was above in Heaven; and when they gave him to understand that it was so, he pointed his finger down towards the ground, and asked whether the King of Castille was below on earth; and when they gave him to understand that it was so, he marvelled, and showed by his manner that it pleased him, and said that he should like to see him. Other subjects were discussed in conversation, and his visit pleased him, and the General ordered some refreshment to be brought to him, and he remained for a time in the ship very contented and happy, seeing the friendly way in which they received him; and although the Indians who came from Meta were in the stocks near him, he only glanced at them once, and when he was going he asked the General to give them to him. He answered him with pleasant words that he could not do so. He had previously asked him whether he would cease warring with Meta, and make friends with him, and Vyle had said that he did not wish to be his friend. And Meta's son having been asked whether he and his father would not be friends with Vyle, he said "No." The General gave Vyle to understand that neither he nor his Indians must eat human flesh any more, showing that it was a wicked thing to do; and he answered that he would do so no more, and that he would bury it, giving them to understand this by signs; and thereupon they all went away much pleased. And they brought two canoes laden with cocoanuts and *vinahu*, which form their food.

---

[1] The extraordinary aptitude of these natives for wriggling out of bonds is well known. Handcuffs are of little use, and about half the prisoners captured by ships of war have succeeded in making their escape.

---

[1] Shell money.

---

[1] *Todo* is doubtless a mistake for *toldo*.

[2] *Igoe*, Thou.

[3] *Iara*.

[4] *Tapulu* = We two. Dual inclusive pronoun.

[5] *Neknoni* = The men.

Meta's Indians were kept prisoners until Wednesday, the 24th of March; and, seeing that they did not come for them, nor enquire after them (in order that they might know that we had not killed and eaten them as they would have done), the General resolved to send two of them, who were old and miserable, to tell Meta that it was not so, but that, on the contrary, we had treated them well, which was the case, and that he would set his son and the other prisoner free, in order that he might be inclined to come and see us, and bring some food. And when they left they made signs that they would do this, and we understood what their meaning was, and we explained ours to them, for they are very intelligent for savages.

About fifteen days after the Indians had gone on shore four canoes came to the ship, with another of Meta's sons, a brother of the one we had taken. The General was on shore hearing Mass; and they gave us a little food which they brought. And when the two brothers recognised one another they were so overcome with the sight that they wept for joy, although the one dared not come on board the ship, and both were trembling with fear. Then the Master of the Camp and Sarmiento embarked in the boat and took them ashore; but when they heard a gun fired, they were so frightened that they dared not come, and they fled away

The building of the brigantine was begun on the 13th of February, because, during the interval, they went to find a convenient place whence to obtain good timber, for we had brought but little with us. We found so much in this island that many ships, both large and small, might be built there. The brigantine was finished on Saturday, the 3rd of April. It was launched on the Sunday following, which was Lazarus Sunday.[1] On the following Wednesday, the 18th [7th] of April, the Master of the Camp, and Hernando

---

[1] Here spelt *del Azaro.*

Gallego, the Chief Pilot, departed in the brigantine with soldiers and sailors, thirty men in all, and Pedro Sarmiento; and several soldiers did not think this departure to have been well arranged, for, [they said,] the ships ought to have gone out in company with the brigantine. Hearing this, the General called the Master of the Camp and the pilots, and asked them their opinion. And they all deferred to that of Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, for he was a man who understood the matter well; and, being questioned, he replied that it was not right for the ships to go out of this harbour, which was a very safe one, until we knew where we were going to, because we might lose them through not having sufficiently examined this land, for there appeared to be many shoals, so that, if we went on sailing, we might put them where we could not get them out again, and with a cross sea, or a strong wind, we might drift upon some shoal, without being able to prevent it. Having heard this, the opinion that Hernando Gallego expressed seemed to all of them to be right, so they submitted to his judgment, and put what he had proposed into execution. And because, on the day on which we sailed from the first island that we had seen, some of the soldiers had murmured because we had not taken it (Pedro Sarmiento, as it was understood, telling them that they had left a great kingdom behind them, as your Lordship has been given to understand), it therefore seemed right that the first expedition should be towards the east, from which direction we had come, in order that they might examine the island and the end of it, and afterwards go into an altitude of 10 degrees, more or less, and put out to sea, to find out whether there were any island or land to which they might go with the ships, and, if they did not find any, that they should return so that we might go forward, but, if they found any, they should look for a port, that the ships should not have to go beating about, and be in danger if bad weather came on; in this way, if there was good land, there would be no necessity for going further, and, if there was none, there would be no more cause for grumbling.

On Good Friday, the 16th of April, Vylevanarra came to the ship, and it was some days since we had seen him and he had been so friendly. And as they had made him understand before how much land the King of Castille had, and how great were his possessions, they showed him a marine chart, pointing them out to him on it, and then they pointed out a very small island on the chart, telling him that it was his; and he marvelled, and said that his own was very large. And when they told him that it was not large, and that His Majesty had many *natlonys* in his country, and many *tauriquis* for *natlonys*, he was astonished and said that he would like to be a *tauriqui* of His Majesty, and to obey, as he ought, saying that he and his *natlonys* and *gases*,[1] which are the women, and *solis*, that is to say, children, were *natlonys* of His Majesty, and that they would serve him.

That day, the General took possession in the name of His Majesty.

Vyle had come without our having sent to ask him, and he paid homage of his own free will; and he was much pleased when he had done this. And he and his people seemed to be much pleased at it, and ever afterwards he and his Indians said that they wished to go and see the King of Castille, because they were his vassals.

This day it was reported that while the Master of the Camp and his people were going in the brigantine to the dwelling of a *tauriqui* named Brata, many Indians came out in canoes, calling out to them to come to them with the brigantine, and they would give them food. And when our men were drawing near to them, they began to shoot arrows at them, and the Master of the Camp stood, warding off the arrows with his shield and sword, calling them brothers, and telling them that, if they were quiet, his people would not do them any harm; but all without avail, for whilst he was telling them this, the Indians began to shoot faster at our people, and our people shot at them, and remained sheltered by the waist-cloths of the brigantine. And our people killed more than twenty of them, and amongst them two chiefs; and when they came up to seize the brigantine, our people thrust at them with pikes, and caught some of the canoes with the hooks of the pikes, and this was seen by some of the Indians who had been with them.[1]

---

[1] See the Vocabulary on p. lxxxiv.

In the morning of the next day, he [Vyle] came back, thinking that he was bound to do something more because he had given his allegiance to His Majesty and wished to be his vassal. He brought some cocoanuts and *vinahu* and a very large turtle, which had nearly as much meat upon it as a sheep; the meat was very savoury, and looked like veal. He would not come on board, but he sent his Indians to give this present, and presently he went direct to where the brigantine had been built, and when he saw all the débris of the wood, which they had cut off and worked with the iron tools, and some boards that had been sawn, he was much astonished, and returned and went to the *Almiranta*, as he had not yet been on board her. And as it was getting late, he came to take leave of the General, speaking from his canoe, saying that he was going home. He bade him good night and said that he would come again to see him. He asked for a dish to eat from, as they had none, nor any kind of vessel to drink from, nor to cook with, as it appeared that Nature had not taught them the use of them:[1] so the General gave him one, and he went away much pleased.

---

[1] They were describing the events of the previous Sunday, April 11th, which are related on p. 282.

After Vyle had given his allegiance, more Indians came to the ships than before. They brought some food, and four days after there came Vyle's brother, named Riquya, who is the chief of another tribe. And although he came several times, he did not stay long. And when he knew that his brother had given his allegiance, and he thought that it was well established, he remained to sleep on board, he and his Indians, and they said that they would like to go with us to see the King of Castille.

In this island of Santa Ysabel there are white and green and red and tawny and mottled parrots, some like magpies and others of many colours. And there are turkeys[2] and pheasants,[3] and eagles, and other birds of prey, and very large ring-doves, and some of these have a very red fleshy substance like cherries above their beaks, and their feathers are like the neck of a peacock; they have galls, which those of Peru have not. They have also small dogs like those of Castille. They have the bark of a tree, which they eat, and which seems to be cinnamon, except that the scent is a little like fennel, and its taste something like a clove, and holding it on the tongue it makes the mouth froth, as very fine cinnamon generally does; and they value it much.[4] There are trees which yield a very sweet-smelling gum. Some are aromatic, and when you cut the bark of others, it almost seems as if blood came from them, and if you make a cut between the bark and the heart, and throw it into the water, it dyes it deep blue and the heart is dyed yellow. This was seen when they cut one of these trees in felling timber for building the brigantine and repairing the ships. They have sarsaparilla, and much *albanca*, sweet basil,[1] and taragontia[2] and bleidos.[3] The Indians do not know anything about them. On a hillock near where they were making the brigantine, we found a herb, on taking hold of which, wherever the leaves touched, the hands appeared to be burnt, and so great is the pain that is felt on squeezing it in the hand, that it seems as if the hand were burnt with fire. In this island, there are many sweet-smelling trees and herbs throughout the whole mountain. There are also oranges, but the Indians do not eat them, nor know anything about them.[4] There are pippins, which in form and colour are like those of Carthagena, and they grow upon a thistle, but the Indians do not eat them; they smell very much like *camolsa*.[5] No one dared eat any, for they did not see the Indians eat any. There is one shrub that has a white flower that smells like jasmine,[6] and another that smells like the musk-rose.

---

[1] Pottery is not made in the Eastern part of the group.

[2] The scrub turkey.

[3] Perhaps the megapode.

[4] The Ysabel natives are very fond of chewing an aromatic bark highly charged with resin, or gum-resin.

There are differently coloured Indians in this island; some are of the colour of those of Peru, and some are black, and some are fair, but those that are fair are those that do not go out of their houses, and the boys[7] curl their hair: many make themselves fair, and some are fair[8] by nature. The women are very good-looking, and some are fairer than those of Peru; both men and women take a great deal of trouble in making their teeth black, and in keeping them so. The children are well-featured, and do not look so ugly, as their teeth are white. The women wear their hair short; it does not come down to their shoulders, and is very fair. The Indians cut their hair in different patterns, some with crowns, like friars,[1] others like ourselves; others cut half the hair towards the back of the head; others leave a lock, which looks like a cap worn on one side; others leave a lock which grows so long that from the top of the ear it reaches to the breast, and they wear it in a plait; others do not cut their hair at all, but make ringlets for a head-dress (*cocado*[2]), and they curl the hair by the points on both sides, so that it comes above the ear; afterwards they make another very thin curl in the middle of the head, which comes from the back of the head to the front.[3] Their tongues and lips are very red; they colour them with a herb that they eat, which has a broad leaf and burns like pepper, and with lime which they make from *lucayos*, a stone which grows in the sea, like coral; when this herb is chewed in the mouth with some of this lime, it makes a red juice, which is that which makes the mouth and the tongue always red; and they also anoint the face with this juice for ornament, and, although they chew this herb, the juice is not red unless it is mixed with the aforesaid lime.[4] There are bats in this island so large that if everyone in the whole expedition had not seen them, I had hardly dared to mention them, for fear lest I should be taken for a liar. One was killed, and when I measured it, it was more than three feet from the extremity of one wing to the other. It had a head and body like an *ajo* [hedgehog?] and it had fangs. There are a great many of them.

---

[1] Probably *Ocimum Basilicum*.

[2] This may mean the large edible *arum* called *via* by the Fijians.

[3] Probably the *Amarantus Tricolor*.

[4] The *Tabernæmontana Aurantiaca* has an inedible fruit exactly resembling the orange in shape and colour.

[5] Mendaña has *camnesa* (pippins?). Probably the fruit of a prickly *Solanum*.

[6] Perhaps the *Jasminum Didymum*.

[7] Mendaña has the stop here.

[8] *Rubio*: the hair is bleached with lime, but fair-haired people are occasionally met with.

---

[1] The MS. has *fluyres* : *frayles* as Mendaña has it.

[2] *Tocado* according to Mendaña.

[3] Compare Dr. Guppy's description of the modes of dressing the hair (*The Solomon Islands*, p. 116).

[4] Betel-chewing : see p. 134, *note*.

Every moment we were expecting the arrival of the brigantine, which did not come back to the ships for more than thirty days. And Vyle also had neglected to come. And, as with all these barbarians one has to be always cautious, thinking that he and his people would go wherever the brigantine went or stayed, and as so few men had gone in her, the General resolved to send Don Hernando Henriquez, the Ensign-General, with some men, to Vyle's dwelling to enquire into this, and to tell Vyle to come to the ships, as he was wanted.

He went there one morning before daybreak. And when the Indians saw him coming, some of them came down to the water's edge to receive our people, and told them not to go up the hill, for the brigantine was coming, and they had seen it; but, not believing them, they went up the hill, and, having got to the top, they went with all haste to see Vylevanarra, and speak to him. And as they were going to look for him at his dwelling, they came upon him. Although Don Hernando called him, he would not come near him, but avoided him, and fled away. And lest they should think that we would do them any harm, or break the peace we had made with them, we took no more trouble about him. It was understood that he had done this because he feared that when the brigantine came we should wish to take him on board.

Presently the Indians returned to tell our men that the brigantine was coming, and showed them a place from whence they might see her. And they went there and saw that she was nearing the harbour. And as the *tauriqui* would not come out any more they returned to the ships, and twenty Indians came with them and brought them food, though but little; and they returned to the ships at the same time as the brigantine, at twelve o'clock on the 5th of May. When the General saw that the brigantine had brought no Indians, not even one of the two that belonged to Meta, who had fled from them, and that Vylevanarra's men came opportunely, the General thought that it would not be right to go out from thence to the land that they had discovered without taking interpreters, so he ordered his men to take two of them, and they did so; the rest he sent away, embracing them and giving them presents, and he told them to tell Vyle that he had taken these Indians because he had not come to see him, but for all that he would none the less be his friend and brother; and that we wanted them that they might serve us in speaking the language in the islands and the lands that we should discover.

About that time a brother of the *tauriqui* Vyle, called Riquya, stayed on board the *Capitana* all night. Next morning he said that he wished to go, and the General made them put him ashore in the boat, and he told him to tell his brother that it would give him great pleasure to see him, and that he would remain his friend, and that the Indians, whom he was taking away, would be sent back to the island. The natives now understood our language very well, and we theirs, and one would suppose we had been brought up together. When they wished to come to the ship, if they had not a canoe, they came down to the edge of the water and called out distinctly, *Ven aca batel* ("Come along, boat"), for us to send it, and we sent it, and in this manner they came very often to dine with the General, and the chiefs sat down at his table, and the rest he ordered to be fed. They are so cleanly that they hardly moisten their fingers, afterwards cleansing themselves neatly, as if they had been always brought up to do so.

And now to return to the brigantine. We were much pleased to see her, being afraid that she would not come, as she was so much behind time, for it was four weeks that day since she had gone away. And some of the soldiers had died of sickness at that port, and others were ill with fever, which weakened them very much. But to enable us to go out from thence it had pleased our Lord that the Master of the Camp and the Chief Pilot and most of the people should return in good health, at which all rejoiced, as also at the good news which they brought, that they had discovered many islands, and much better ones. The success that they had in their voyage and in everything else is as follows:—

THE ACCOUNT THAT THE BRIGANTINE BROUGHT OF THE FIRST VOYAGE WHICH SHE MADE AFTER THEY LAUNCHED HER IN THE ISLAND OF SANTA YSABEL.

On the 7th of April, at the hour of Vespers, the brigantine went out on a voyage of discovery, and in her Pedro de Ortega Valencia, Master of the Camp, whom your Lordship appointed Captain, and F^ro^ [Hernando] Gallego, the Chief Pilot of the Fleet. We all felt very much our approaching separation, the one from the other, as we had always been on the most brotherly terms, thanks to our Lord God and our King. They went along the coast with a contrary wind, and in the middle of the night were forced to take harbour. The wind went down, and on Thursday morning, the 8th of April, they went out with the land breeze.

On the morning of the next day, Friday, they anchored off the little island where they slept the first night that they went to Meta's, and there many canoes, with many Indian men and women, came out to them, all of whom, after some had taken a turn round the brigantine without attempting to go on board, went off to the other part of the island. They cut some palmettos, and as the wind was always contrary, they slept that night near the land and dwelling of Meta.

At daybreak the next day, Saturday, they put out to sea with a light land breeze, that they might afterwards make their way with the land and sea breezes. Presently eight other canoes came out to them, and accompanied them for some time and gave them two fish, and, as the wind and sea increased, they went away; and the brigantine was forced to lie off the coast and anchor. The Master of the Camp ordered Francisco Garcia Tarifeno to go on shore with eight soldiers and see whether there was any food, so as to husband our own, for we had but little of it. The Indians, who were on the beach (there might be about thirty or forty of them), would not wait, although our men called out to them to do so, but went up to their huts, and when they were near the top they began to discharge arrows and throw stones at our people, and our people gained the summit, discharging the arquebuses in the air, without doing anyone any harm, and, entering into the huts, they found a quantity of food, *pana*, and cocoanuts. They brought a supply, and embarked laden with it, and slept in front of the huts.

Next day, Palm Sunday, they went out with the land breeze, and they discovered another island to the north, which they called Isla de Ramos.[1] And about eight in the morning four canoes came out from the shore near where they had slept the night before, making signs that the men should go to their houses, that they were friendly, and would give them food, *pana* and cocoanuts; that our people should give them a rope, in order that they might tow them thither quickly. Sixteen canoes joined them, in which came about one hundred and thirteen Indians, very well armed with bows and arrows and clubs, and in one of them, standing upright with his weapons, an old man, who went round the brigantine and threatened all the other canoes, saying that he alone would take them, and making signs that they should go with him, and if not, that he would kill them all. They surrounded our men very impudently, and they began to shoot with much boldness, and after they had fired some arrows the Master of the Camp ordered his people to fire at them, and with an arquebus shot they killed the old chief, who fell into the sea, and was never seen again. And they immediately departed, shooting at them with arrows nevertheless, but when our people fired some arquebus shots, with which some damage was done, they withdrew and went away.

---

[1] Malaita; see page 25, *note*.

And this day they came to anchor; and the Indians made a great noise on a high ridge about a gun-shot off without doing any injury; and, while they were waiting for the wind to go down, it rose higher, and as it appeared to the Chief Pilot that their position was a bad one, and that they were in danger because the coast was rocky, he ordered them to put out the oars, and with much labour, both on the part of the sailors and the negroes, they got out to sea, and set sail and doubled the point; and the wind veered, and they entered the bay with much anxiety, as it was a dark night. And all along the coast there were many reefs and shoals, so that it would be difficult to make it even in broad daylight, and they cast anchor.

On Monday morning they went ashore to get water, and they saw four or five canoes upon the seashore, and about eighty Indians on the beach, and three Indians with bows went on shore from one of the canoes there: they joined those on shore, and called out to our people to come ashore, making signs of friendship. The Master of the Camp ordered Al° R° Franco to disembark with eight soldiers; it was low tide, and the water came up to their waists. They called out to the Indians in a friendly manner, but they retreated as if they were going to fight, and when they saw that our men were at a little distance from the brigantine they began to shoot arrows, and the soldiers fired at them without killing anyone; and presently they took to flight without stopping. Our people took water and what they had need of, and remained there that night.

On the morning of the next day, Tuesday, they entered into a large bay, and it seemed as if a great river came out of it, which pleased them much, for they thought that it would prove to be a continent. As they were going up the bay, there came out eleven canoes, and in them were one hundred and fifty Indians, well armed with bows and arrows; our men came to the beach, where they saw some huts, and there appeared to be some nets in them. And as they wished to barter with them they anchored, and called to the Indians, who dared not come, and those on shore began to shoot arrows, and those on the sea did the same. Our men approached them in a friendly manner, but when the natives began to shoot at them, they hit one with a ball, who fell dead, and they wounded others. Presently the Indians one and all took to flight. They entered farther in, and saw in the same bay a small archipelago of islands, and there did not appear to be any river, and they saw many huts all around. It seemed to be a very peaceful country, well cultivated and peopled, and better than that of Vyle. They went out of the bay, and went to sleep in a harbour as far up the coast as 12 degrees south, without stopping except to take in water and wood.

Next day the Indians came out peaceably, and said that they wished to be friends if our men would not do them any harm. The Master of the Camp made signs to them, giving them to understand that our people were friends of the *tauriqui* Vyle and other *tauriquis* of that island, and that they would only harm those who harmed them; and so they came and joined us. A *tauriqui*, who called himself Babidea, came, and brought them many cocoanuts and *panaes* and other things that they had. And the Master of the Camp gave him a string of beads and a knife, and they were much pleased.

At dawn on Holy Thursday they sailed up the coast with the land breeze the space of a league, and it appeared to be an island, because it diminished on the west side, and it seemed well to Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, to cross over to another island which appeared to the south of the Island of Ramos, and they crossed a distance of about 8 leagues from the said island of Santa Ysabel to the said island. They reached it two hours after nightfall; there were many reefs round about it. They dropped anchor in three fathoms, and they dragged the anchor twice, and found themselves in twenty-five fathoms. They remained there that night in much anxiety, for it blew very hard for a little while during the night, but afterwards it became fine. They named it the Island of La Galera,[1] because it was a small island shaped like a galley, and was about two leagues in circumference.

On the next day, Good Friday, they went out from that island to go to another, a league and a half to the east. It seemed to be a land of bare mountains with huts and many clearings planted thickly with *panaes* and *ynames*. They gave it the name of Buena Vista. They saw a very large canoe, which approached them. They counted twenty oars in it on each side, and in it were forty-five Indians, laden with much food, and they understood that there was a trade in food from one island to another; presently there came out another smaller canoe, in which was a *tauriqui*; they drew very near the brigantine, showing us a string of beads like those which are found in Guacas of Peru. The Master of the Camp showed them what we carried with us. They drew nearer, and the Master of the Camp gave the *tauriqui* some of what we had, and the *tauriqui* sent some of his. The Master of the Camp put them round his neck, and the *tauriqui* did the same; he turned to fetch another larger string, telling the Master of the Camp to put it on his leg, and he did so. And the Master of the Camp sent him another [string of beads], and a bell and a knife, and the *tauriqui* accepted them, and made signs that he should disembark, and at that moment sixteen canoes joined them, and in them about one hundred and fifty Indians; our men gave a rope to the large canoe, so that it might tow the brigantine. It was amusing to see the haste they made; each of them asked for a rope, and they appeared to be so pleased that we understood that they had already divided us up amongst themselves. Presently two hundred Indians collected on the beach, so that there were about four hundred altogether; and since, because the tide was low, the brigantine could not approach the shore, the Master of the Camp jumped overboard, the water being about up to his waist, with ten soldiers armed with arquebuses and three sailors and four negroes and one half-caste, nineteen in all, leaving the brigantine with the Chief Pilot and the rest, well on their guard, in order that, if many Indians came, they might turn the culverins upon them when they had landed. The *tauriqui*, who had come in his canoe with his Indians, came to our people, and the Master of the Camp entertained him well and gave him more beads, and also some to those that came with him. And the Master of the Camp took possession of the island in the name of His Majesty, and of all the islands round it, which were numerous though small. And when our people asked for something to eat, saying that they would pay the *tauriqui*, he took them to some huts higher up from the place where they had disembarked, and he brought them ten cocoanuts in all; and on the Master of the Camp telling them that that was little enough for all of them, they spoke among themselves, and the *tauriqui* ordered them not to knock down any more, and he gave the Master of the Camp back the string of beads that he had given him, and the Master of the Camp took it and then gave it back again. And the Indian took it angrily, and threw it on the ground, and the Master of the Camp would not take the cocoanuts, and our people went towards the brigantine, and the Indians followed them; and, on arriving at the said huts, on account of the quantity of palm-trees that were on the beach, the Master of the Camp ordered them to cut down three or four of them that they might eat the fruit. And when the Indians saw them cutting them down they began to make a great outcry, and the Master of the Camp told them that as they would not give them to eat, and as they had not given them the food which they brought with them, because they had not given it to them, they were going to take it, but that if they gave it to them, they would not do them any damage, but if not, that they would cut down the trees. And they waited for their answer, but as they did not give them anything nor bring anything, our people began to cut down the palm-trees to eat the fruit. More than three hundred Indians attacked our people, discharging many arrows and throwing stones at them, which harassed them. The Master of the Camp would not give us leave to shoot at them, making signs of the friendship they had shown us, but they still continued. And as they persisted, the Master of the Camp ordered his men to fire, and the first shot killed one Indian and wounded others, and, seeing this, they all turned their backs. And, going in pursuit in order to get out from among the palm-trees, the Master of the Camp ordered that no one should fire unless the

---

[1] North Island.

Indians returned to the attack; and when the Indians got to the beach, they returned to the attack, and gave our people another shower of arrows and stones, and the Master of the Camp ordered an arquebusier to fire a shot; he fired at an Indian, who, holding a two-handed wooden club, was leading in front, and cheering the others on. We gave him a shot in the breast, by which he was doubled up, and the rest turned their backs, and the Master of the Camp ordered them not to fire, nor follow up the retreat, but to return to the brigantine. And he was very sorry for what had occurred, and was much grieved, because it was the most holy day, that of the Passion of Our Redeemer; but if he had not acted thus, worse would have befallen our people while they were getting back on board the brigantine, for they would have had to embark up to their waists in water, and the Indians might have occasioned great loss to them, while the people in the brigantine might have done the same to them with the culverins: and, as it had always been his intention that this voyage of discovery should be made with the least possible harm to the natives, when any happened, it was always to avoid more serious destruction on our side. Our men embarked in the brigantine about the hour of Vespers; all the canoes were dispersed, each to its own destination. Our people went to anchor off a little island near by, about a quarter of a league distant. Our people went on shore, where they found a hidden store of cocoanuts, numbering more than one thousand. They put them into the brigantine, and kept a good watch that night.

Next morning, on the Eve of the Resurrection, a canoe came alongside with three Indians, and they approached the brigantine, saying that they would be friends, and that they did not wish to do any harm, nor for our people to do them any. And the Master of the Camp said that he considered them his friends, and told them to provide food, for which he would pay them. They told our people that they might collect from that island such cocoanuts as they wanted, as there was an abundance of them, and that they would bring them *pana*, which is a root like the truffle, something like the potatoes (*papas*) of Peru. And the Master of the Camp made signs to them to bring some pigs, which they call *nambolos*,[1] for there seemed to be many of them in the island, as our men had found several of their jaw-bones. They said that they would bring them. Seeing that they did not come back, our people went direct to the huts, and when the Indians saw them go, they went up the mountain side, where there were other huts. And the Master of the Camp went on shore with ten soldiers, ten shield-bearers, and three negroes, and they went up the face of the mountain to the huts, and the Indians retired and went up to the huts, and from thence they sent two Indians with a pig like those of Castille, saying to us that we should take it and go away.[2] And the Master of the Camp embraced them, and told them that he considered them his friends. And he went up with them to the huts. And the Indians, after having waited for him (it appeared that there were some five hundred Indians round about), collected together, and our men treated them with much show of affection and friendship, and asked them for more pigs. They said that they had very few, and that they would get them from other islands, and they would give them another if our men would go away. Our people took the two pigs, and thanked God who had given them food for Easter Day. This island is densely populated with a fine and well-featured race of men. It seemed to be a healthy land, for the mountain looked parched, as in Spain. There were many old people, and amongst them one man who appeared to be more than one hundred years old, and a woman more than one hundred and twenty years old. It would be easy to implant in them our Holy Catholic Faith, for they have no temple nor *mochaderos*, as in the other islands. They are more proficient in everything than the people of the Island of Santa Ysabel, but all go naked, with waist-cloths only. No kind of gold or silver was found among them. It seemed likely that there was some, and some pearls, for we found mother-of-pearl and pearl shells, but we could not make sure of this, as the water was very deep.

---

[1] *Na mbolo*, the present word. It is a popular fallacy that pigs were introduced into the Pacific Islands by the European discoverers. Pigs seem to have been in most of the islands almost as long as human inhabitants.

[2] The Spanish reads, "saying to *us* that *they* should take it, and that *we* should go away" (all three meaning "our people"); Mendaña has been followed in this translation.

Next morning, on the day of the Feast of the Resurrection, they sailed to another island near by. They named it San Dimas. It is half a league distant from Buena Vista;[1] and at the time that they set sail to go out from where they were they saw a very bright star like the morning star, and they were much delighted to see it on such a great day; and they went on their way direct to the said Island of San Dimas, and discovered many islands on one side and on the other, and some isolated rocks (*mogotos*). To the larger one they gave the name Pascoa Florida. When they arrived at San Dimas some canoes came out, and they increased in number to twenty-five, all well equipped, and four very large ones carried each forty or fifty *gandules*[2] with their bows and arrows, and wooden swords and lances. They came round the brigantine, and each one wished to take it to his own village. They talked a great deal, without our being able to understand much, except that they had peaceful intentions. So when, on the other hand, our people saw them putting their bows and arrows in order, and placing baskets of stones in their canoes, they enquired of them by signs and words whether they desired peace or war. They anchored near the land, at which the Indians were much pleased, thinking that they could take them like birds in a nest; and, seeing that the brigantine did not take a longer sweep than one of their own canoes, and only held thirty people, they were contented. The greater part of the canoes came round the brigantine, and two of them were stranded, in order that they might join those on land; and there might be about six hundred *gandules* altogether, rather more than less. And as it appeared to Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, that he was in danger, being so close inshore, and so near some rocks, which might be dry when the tide went down, he ordered them to hoist up the kedge anchor.[1] And when the Indians saw it, thinking that they were going, those who had gone ashore in the two large canoes came back to re-embark in the greatest possible fury, and with a loud noise began to shoot arrows and stones from all sides very rapidly. And with the first shot that they fired our people killed an Indian in one canoe, and with other discharges they killed three more in the same canoe. All the soldiers fired together; they sent three or four canoes to the bottom, and they killed by chance ten or twelve Indians and wounded others; and although the Indians persevered in their attack, which they made three times, when at length they saw it was going badly with them, they dispersed and went away without any of our people receiving any hurt, although they sent many stones and arrows into the brigantine, which the shield-bearers warded off in good

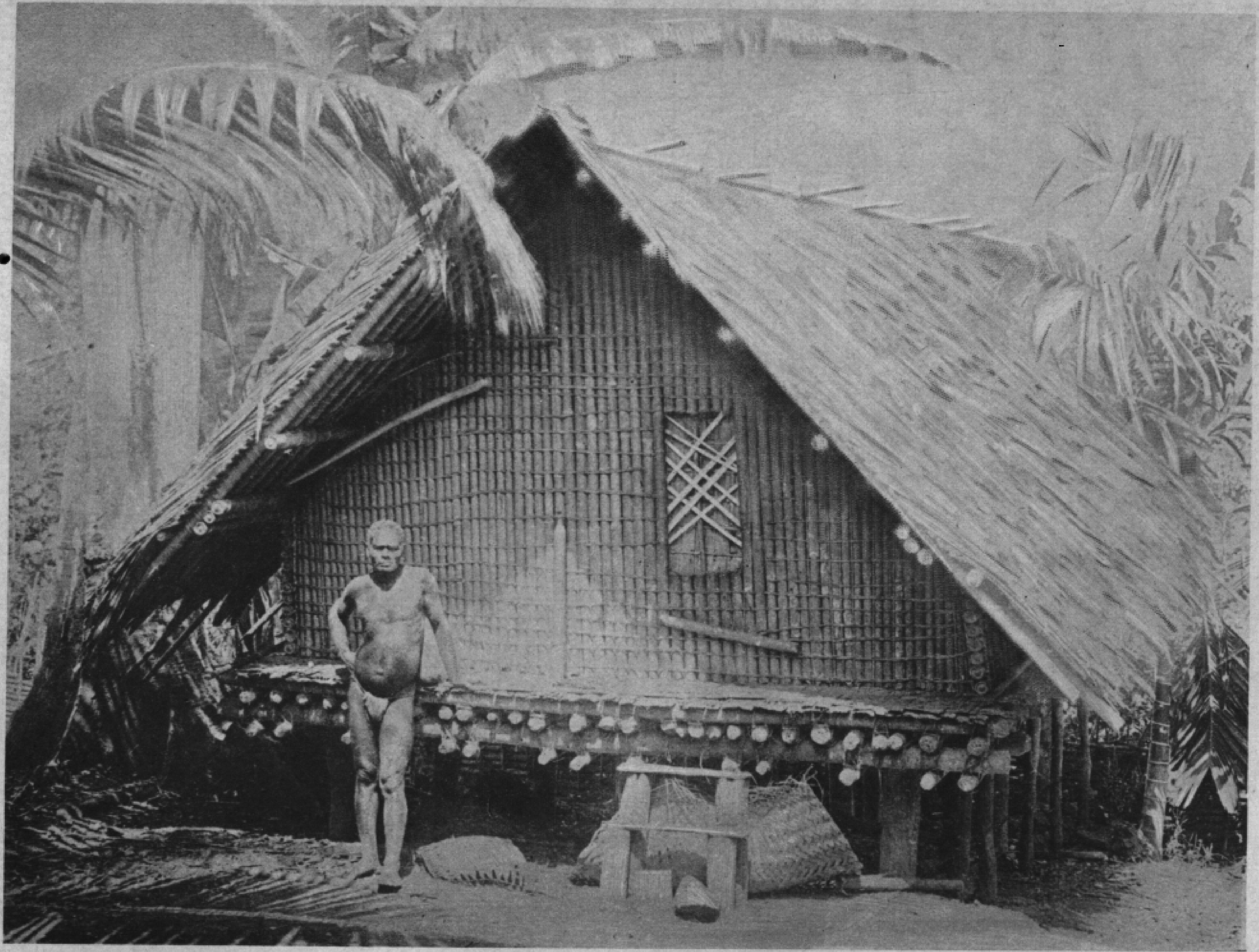
---

[1] See p. 29, *note*, for the identity of these islands. Catoira, who obtained his information at second hand, has confused the names.

[2] Since Don Pascual de Gayangos' note on p. 41 went to press, we find that Barcia's Dictionary gives *Gandul* as ruffian, vagabond, etc.

---

[1] *Reson* in the original.



Printing Arts Cº. Lᵈ. sc.

A House in the Gela (Florida) Group.
with door barricaded.

order. And a little later, after they were dispersed, eight or ten Indians appeared on the beach, intimating by signs that they desired a truce, and laying their arms on the ground. The Master of the Camp made signs to them that he also wished it, and that his people would do no harm to anyone, except to any who might do them harm. And they said that those who had given us battle (*l'aguacabara*[1]) were not from that island, but from another one. After he had dined, the Master of the Camp disembarked with ten arquebusiers, and the Indians would not wait for them, much as our men tried to reassure them; and when he saw this, the Master of the Camp took possession of this island and of those round about on behalf of the General in the name of His Majesty, and he returned and re-embarked.

Next day they went from thence to a large island which appeared towards the east, and, as there was little wind, they could not get there, but they went near another island on the way; and as it appeared to the Chief Pilot, Hernando Gallego, to be very like an island off Galicia, his own country, which is called Sesarga, he gave it the same name. Sixteen small canoes came out from it, and in all about one hundred Indians, and some of them came to the brigantine, asking our people to go to their land; but, although it was only about two leagues off, the Master of the Camp did not wish to go there, but rather to the one that appeared to be larger. And, following their course, they could not get there that day, and they remained all night in a cross sea till daybreak, in fear of the reefs and shoals.

Next morning, the last day of Easter-tide, they arrived at some land which appeared better than any which they had yet found, full of savannahs and bare mountains, the beach being quite clean, without any reefs, and they could have run a rowing-boat right ashore. No canoes came out, at which they wondered. Presently a few small ones came out to receive them, and some Indians swimming, and women and boys in the water up to their breasts, altogether about two hundred. Our people began to row the brigantine, and the Indians began to lay hold of her, and of the warp (*marra*), thinking to tow her ashore; and when our men prevented them, both men and women began throwing a quantity of stones; and in order to frighten them and not to kill them, our men fired shots in the air, but for all this they killed one. The Master of the Camp disembarked with six arquebusiers and four shield-bearers, and went to a regularly laid-out village, which had twenty-six houses, or huts, very large and well made, all of canes, and thatched with the grass of the savannah, for they do not seem to have palm-trees on the coast, which is a sign of a fertile soil and a mild climate. This village is near the beach, like Callao de Lima, on the bank of a river with a good stream of water in it, which seemed to come from afar. There were indications of gold in the country. They found a quantity of their food in the huts, which was *ynames* and *panaes*. They took what they wanted. And the Master of the Camp took possession, as he did of the rest, and he gave it the name of his country, which is Guadalcanal, and the river he called Ortega, for he is named Pedro de Ortega. They found a basket of roots of green ginger in one of the huts, at which they were much pleased. They would have liked to go a couple of days' journey inland, but being so few they dared not venture. This land appeared to them large and good, and to be fit for agriculture, and for rearing [cattle]. The Master of the Camp decided to return after what he had done, and to give an account of the discovery to the ships, for it was some days since they had left; and they wished to spare them anxiety, having besides reached 10½ degrees South without seeing any more land. The Master of the Camp wished to leave the islands for the open sea, but Hernando Gallego did not like the idea, as she was a small vessel, and should the wind become contrary they might not be able to put back. So they proceeded on their voyage to ask the General to come to this River Ortega and the island with the ships, to be able to give a description of it in Los Reyes, and to reconnoitre the land and afterwards to go round it with the brigantine. It appeared to Hernando Gallego to be a larger island than San Domingo in the Mar Oceana, and he thought that on the other side there might be other still larger islands. Following their course they went in quest of the *tauriqui* Ponemonefa, whom they had heard was a great chief, and ruled over many people, and where there was said to be much food and some deer.

---

[1] Mendaña has *guazavasa.*

On Wednesday, the 21st day of April, they arrived at the island of the said *tauriqui*, which island is called Borru.[1] It is a quarter of a league distant from that of Santa Ysabel, and less at some points. They entered more than seven leagues between the islands with a clear bottom, where large carracks could lie in numbers sheltered from all winds, as there are many turns and windings and some bays.[2] The entrance by which they went in was on the south-east side, and the exit on the north-west. This Ponemonefa also holds lands in the Island of Santa Ysabel, and is more powerful than any other *tauriqui*. They call him *Caybaco*, that is to say "Great Lord," and all fear him. He lives in this island of Borru, on which the Master of the Camp disembarked with twelve arquebusiers and as many shield-bearers, and they went up along the beach.

---

[1] St. George's Island.

[2] Thousand Ships Bay.

There were many huts, well kept and clean, but without any food in them, and the Indians had no arms in their hands, but were not disturbed at our carrying them; they said that they had already heard of us, and that they would do no harm if none was done to them. After a little time more than a thousand Indians came, divided into different parties, but without any arms. The Master of the Camp made them presents, and told them to call the *tauriqui*, whom he wished to see, and to give presents to him; and they said that the *tauriqui* was afraid and dared not come; and, in spite of all the assurance of security that he might give him, the *tauriqui* never would come. Having arrived at the *tauriqui's* house, which was in the middle of the others, the Master of the Camp, in the presence of the Indians, took possession, as he had done of all the rest of the islands, and told the Indians that as they were his friends, they should give us some pigs, for, by the appearance of the earth in which they had been rooting, it was evident that they had a great many. And when they perceived what we wanted, they yelled out, and went up the hill, and would not give us any; and after a little while the Indians went up into the hills and abandoned their houses. Our men went on to other houses, and found a young pig which had been left fastened up by a rope. And in a very large shed (*galpon*)[1] there were four canoes, which by their size seemed to belong to the *tauriqui*. The Master of the Camp ordered his men to launch them, and when they were launched they embarked in the brigantine; and presently the Indians came to the beach, asking for the canoes; and the Master of the Camp told them that as they were friends, and the *tauriqui* would not come, nor give them a single pig, for that reason they had taken the canoes which belonged to the *tauriqui*, and that in order to get them back they must give ten pigs. They brought two, and he gave them one of the canoes; and, as it was late, our people put off a little, and remained there that night.

---

[1] *Galpon* is a South American word, meaning "large shed."

In the morning of the next day, Friday, two Indians came with a canoe bringing two more pigs, and they gave them another canoe: our people said that if they wished for the other two they must bring four pigs. Our people waited awhile, and as the Indians did not come they took the canoes away. This island is very picturesque and well peopled, for they saw at the least more than one hundred and fifty houses, or huts, very well constructed, and more than one hundred canoes were hauled up dry; it might be about 25 leagues in circumference. They gave it the name of the Island of San Jorge. They determined to go round the Island of Santa Ysabel to ascertain the size of it, and also to see whether more islands appeared to the south of it. They went along the coast on Friday and Saturday without seeing any habitation or any canoes, till Sunday, the 25th of April, when they saw coming towards them eight fishing canoes, none of which carried more than four Indians. They soon drew near to the brigantine, which was under sail, and seeing that there were so few of them, and that there did not seem to be anything in the canoes but the nets, they did not trouble to light their matches, so as not to waste ammunition, as they were getting short of it. While, therefore, they were off their guard, talking with them, from each little canoe an archer began shooting; and whilst they were lighting their matches the Indians gave them a good shower of arrows, by which a soldier was wounded, but presently this man revenged himself, for at the first shot he knocked over one Indian, and a second soldier another one, and they fled away, with two of their number dead and others wounded. And presently, from among the reefs which rose up ahead, there came out twelve fishing canoes, with the intention of doing the same thing as the others, because one came on ahead with an Indian in the middle brandishing his bow ; therefore, to prevent more injury, the Master of the Camp ordered them to fire at them at long range, and they fired three arquebus shots, which all told on board the canoe ; so they turned, fleeing towards the others, giving warning of what was happening, and the rest did not come to our people.

The people of this island are very bold. They have no friendship the one with the other ; and this is a well ascertained fact, for although we had been two months and a half on this Island of Santa Ysabel, the whole island did not know of our arrival, but only here and there. At every league there ventured out six little canoes, like the one mentioned, with two or three [Indians] shooting some two dozen arrows : and it is certain that if they had been people under a leader, and there had been a principal chief to obey, by some three hundred canoes joining together and persisting in fighting, which they easily could have done, one brigantine going alone with but few people on board might easily have been harassed. Our men could not go at night, because there are shoals and reefs all along the coast. And that Sunday night they entered into a bay to anchor, in which next day, Monday, at daybreak, they saw a thing worth noticing, and a positive fact, which was, that at the end of the island, at the other side, they passed flocks of bats on the wing, in numbers more than two thousand, as large as kites, the smallest the size of pigeons; and it is a fact that at the entrance of the harbour of La Estrella, where they built the brigantine, a soldier killed one, which was five feet long from tip to tip, as has been said before, the head larger than a hedgehog's, and claws like those of a hawk and larger, and a claw larger than the aforesaid on the extremity of each wing, and certainly if they bite like those on the continent, they could depopulate a kingdom.[1]

All day, on Monday, they went on up the coast without any canoes coming out. Hernando Gallego took an observation of the sun that day, in 7¾ deg. 8 minutes.

Next day, Tuesday, the 27th of April, the Chief Pilot, Hernando Gallego, thought that he had got into a channel, which he expected to lead to the other side of the island, and all that day he went on among an archipelago of islands, large and small, through which the current ran with great force. Many canoes came out to us that day, as usual, although these were more impudent, and they made a great noise on land and sea all night.

Next day, Wednesday, they went out of this archipelago of islands, of which there were more than eighty, large and small; they put out to sea to the northward, and about twenty well-armed canoes came out from the said island, with the same boldness as the former ones, and, as our men fired at them at long range, they went away without doing any harm.

It was their intention to return shortly to the ships, because they feared that the General and all would be wearied with what would seem an interminable delay. But the wind was against them for doing this, and they dared not go at night because of the reefs and sandbanks, which exist all round the island two, three, ten and twenty leagues out at sea; and many near the land, which is a thing to alarm anyone trying to get out with ships amongst these islands.

They went coasting along until Sunday, but always with a head wind. In order to allay the anxiety which all would feel at the delay of the brigantine, the Chief Pilot thought that it would be a good thing to send on one of the large canoes which they had brought with them, and half a dozen soldiers in it, who would get along the coast in a day and a half for certain, and that it would please everybody; and this seemed a good plan, and the soldiers volunteered to go, and that plan seemed the best that could be carried out. Then the Master of the Camp sent six soldiers, four arquebusiers and two shield-bearers, one sailor and a negro, and all were well provided with food and ammunition, with instructions that as the shore ahead would be much safer as regards Indians, because they knew them, they should go along the coast in order to be safe from the sea. So they left the brigantine at mid-day, the 10th [2nd] of May. During the whole of that day up to night-fall, they went four leagues, close-hauled, in order to pass some reefs. But as the wind was increasing and the sea becoming very rough, they could not work her properly, and they went broadside on to the reefs with the canoe, and it was broken to pieces, and they thought that they were all lost, for some of them did not know how to swim; but, with great risk, and working for their lives, they got to a small island formed by the reefs, where they thought they should have died at the hands of the Indians, had not God miraculously blessed them and saved them in that strait, because all the ammunition of the arquebuses was wet, and they could not have made use of them. And being afraid that the islanders would come to attack them, they determined to leave, hidden in the island, the two pigs that they were bringing with them, and, bare-footed as they were, to return in search of the brigantine. And those who did not know how to swim went from the island to the beach on the planks of the canoe, the rest swimming. Being barefooted, they began to walk as well as they could for the rocks, and they had much trouble, but seeing that it was a matter of their lives, and that if the brigantine passed without seeing them, they would all be lost, it gave strength to their weakness, and gave them courage, not only for this, but for meeting the natives should they come out. And besides all this, on account of the thick bush and rocks, they were forced to go at times with the water up to their chins. Toiling in this way all night, they came upon three creeks that they could not pass, and they determined to make a small raft, which they lashed with overalls and handkerchiefs, on which those crossed who could not swim, the rest swimming, holding on to it. When it began to dawn, they came to a point of a beach, where, the Sunday before, our men had taken food, and had erected a cross, and they received much comfort on seeing it, and adored it, and gave thanks to God for having brought them through such a terrible journey. And they supplicated His Divine Majesty, making intercession through His glorious Mother, who had been pleased to succour them and help them in so great a strait, and keep them from being eaten by the barbarians of that island; and, prayer being over, they determined to make a raft in the best way they could, so that, if during all Monday they should not discover the brigantine, they might return at night to the island where they had left the pigs, and go from thence to the ships by hiding themselves in the mountain. Besides all this toil they suffered extremely from hunger and thirst. Whilst they were making the raft Our Lord was pleased to deliver them, and to bring the brigantine by that way, and they were not a little pleased to see her, and gave Him many thanks. They made signals to the brigantine with handkerchiefs, and they were soon recognized from the brigantine, a thing which caused those on board much anxiety, as they thought that they must have received some harm. The brigantine came to the reefs and they embarked, much fatigued by hunger and thirst and the rough road, and their feet wounded by the rocks, but although they lost all their clothes and possessions, notwithstanding all the toil, they were very careful of their arms, and they had only lost one arquebus and two swords. It was here that they lost the Indian whom they had taken, and whom they had brought with them as an interpreter, and they could not find him. After this the brigantine pursued her course till she reached the ships.

---

[1] The *Pteropus Grandis*, a fruit-eating bat, or flying-fox.

And now to return, to give an account to your Lordship of the food which the brigantine brought. There were three pigs, a great quantity of native food, which are cocoanuts and roots which they call *ynames*, of which there are many in Guinea,[1] and other smaller ones which they call *panaes*,[2] of which there are plenty, though none was found in this island of Santa Ysabel; and as it appeared to the General that with these roots they could economise the biscuit that they had for rations, he ordered them to serve out eight ounces, with which, and the roots and cocoanuts, the people were as well satisfied as before, and the help was so great that in the *Capitana* they saved eight hundred ounces of biscuit every day, on the understanding that they were going further on their voyage of discovery.

Then orders were given to get the ships ready to go out of this port of La Estrella to go to Guadalcanal to discover more lands in that direction. So we set sail on Saturday, the 8th day of May, and began to run up the coast of the Island of Santa Ysabel, and we made little way that day, because the wind was contrary. On the Sunday following, in the evening, it began to blow hard, on account of which the brigantine, which was sailing close-hauled, could not keep up with the ships, and we were also close-hauled. And because there were not more than four sailors and two soldiers in her, without a pilot, and as there were many reefs off the coast, lest she should be taken abeam and some accident happen, and also on account of the natives, it was necessary to go back to her to take her in tow. The Chief Pilot thought that the *Almiranta* should go ahead because she sailed slowly, and kept dropping astern, and he told the pilots that were on board of her the course that they should take, and so it was done; and at that time night came on. When the people in the brigantine saw that we were approaching her they tacked to reach us, and so as not to tack about, we hove to to await her. At one o'clock in the night the brigantine had not yet arrived, And to show the *Almiranta* where he was going, the Chief Pilot took the compass and placed it on the side, because it was very clear moonlight, and whilst they were watching it, he said that he saw the bottom shining white. Presently they sounded with the lead and could not find bottom, and after a little time, being about four or five leagues from the land, he again saw the bottom very clearly, and he took a cast of the lead, and we were in twelve fathoms, which gave us much concern: they sounded again, and found we were in eight fathoms, and we saw that we were in trouble enough, as the wind was high and increasing in violence. But Our Lord was pleased to deliver us out of that danger, and presently we found plenty of depth. When the brigantine came up we made her fast, although with great difficulty because there was a swell; and we took her in tow.

---

[1] This passage indicates that *yñames* is not a native word, but the word from which our *yam* is derived.

[2] Mendaña's account breaks off here, the remaining portion of the MS. in the Archives of Simancas being lost.

On the Monday following, the 10th of the said month of May, we had a calm all day, and at night the wind began to blow, and veered in such a manner that we were able to double the point of the Island of Santa Ysabel, which had to be done. Up to that time we had come on different tacks, as the wind was very light.

On the Tuesday following, at daybreak, we sighted the

Island of San Dimas, which the Indians call Malayta,[1] and those of Borru and Buena Vista, which certainly deserved that name, because it was more picturesque than any of the others that had been discovered, for there is a very refreshing look about it, and it seemed to be all gardens. It gave us great pleasure to see it, and although it is long, it is a land much cut up by arms of the sea, which divide it in many places. We were coasting along it a long time in order to arrive at Guadalcanal, where the Chief Pilot had indicated a harbour for the ships. Presently we saw the Islands of La Galera and La Florida, and Cesarqa [*sic*],[2] and in the last a burning volcano, which emitted a great smoke. We understood this to be a fact, because the smoke was coming out all the time we were in sight of it, and the people in the brigantine saw it in the same state when they passed by. Then we came to the Island of Guadalcanal, and although the others are fine, it exceeds all in size and picturesqueness, which one certainly could not describe.

Next day, Wednesday, at nightfall we anchored at the Island of Guadalcanal, and were there all night. And because it was a position where there was not much shelter, the next day, at daybreak, the Chief Pilot went in the brigantine with a dozen arquebusiers to seek a port where we should not have a cross sea. And he went down the coast and, although he took the whole day, he could not find one. And so we stayed all the day, during which we had many squalls of wind and a swell. The *Almiranta* dragged her anchor, and lost there a cable and an anchor, and one of our cables was much chafed by the hidden rocks (*ratones*).

---

[1] Catoira is here confused. Mala, or Malayta, had been named Ramos, and the name S. Dimas had been given to the island east of the Sandfly Passage.

[2] Sesarga, or Savo.

On the Friday following the Chief Pilot discovered shelter beyond a point, whither he took the ships; and as we anchored, some canoes, with chiefs in them, came out, and they came on board and made great friends with the General, and he gave them some beads, and they showed us friendship, although it was feigned; but it is always so with them, for beneath their friendship they practise much treachery. They were much pleased. At that time more than a thousand Indians came on to the beach. The General and the priests disembarked, and they set up a cross, which we all adored, whilst the Padre Vicario, Fray Francisco de Galvez, held it leaning against him. And whilst this was happening several natives came to us, and the General showed them much friendship, embracing them and making them signs of peace, and giving them to understand that we would do them no harm. Whilst this was taking place a very robust Indian came to speak to the General, and he went from one to the other among the natives, speaking very urgently, from which we understood that he was their captain. We went direct from thence to a high hill-top, which is in sight of the ships, whither the Father, Fray Francisco, and the other priests, carried the cross on their shoulders, and we set it up, and stood round it to adore it, the priests singing "Vexilla Regis Prodeunt." And whilst this was taking place the Indians of some villages near began to make a disturbance. From thence shortly afterwards we returned to embark, without having done damage to anything belonging to the natives; and when they saw us turning, at the moment when we were going down from the hill-top, they began to utter loud shouts, and they all put themselves under arms, and began to threaten us and to shoot arrows. But we did not see more than ten or twelve *gandules* about to attack us, although a soldier said that he had seen more than three hundred Indians in a valley, which was between the ridge where we placed the cross and another which was near it: and, although they had not wounded any of our people, the General, perceiving that these intended to keep us in check till the rest should come up, ordered our people to fire some arquebuses, with which they killed two of them; the rest fled away, and without following them, we returned to the ships, whence, late in the evening, we saw that the Indians had taken up the cross and were carrying it away on their shoulders.

Next day, Saturday, the 15th of the said month of May, at daybreak, the General embarked with all the people to go and find out what had happened to the cross which we had taken so much trouble to erect, and to get it back with all speed, and, if the Indians would not give it back, to chastise them. And, disembarking, we remained at the foot of the hill. And Captain Sarmiento, with twelve arquebusiers and some shield-bearers, went to where they had planted the cross, with orders that if he found it there he should return, leaving it standing,[1] or [should return] in any case, that orders might be given as to what was to be done. He was not long in coming back, and on his return he gave an account as to how he found the cross, which the natives had put back in the same place where it was before, which gave him much consolation to see. And we took it as a good omen. Our people fixed it and set it up; and whilst they were setting it up four Indians were seen, who, it is understood, had brought it back, but although they called to them they would not come; and our men went down to a village where there did not appear to be any Indians.

Then the General took possession of the island and land in the name of His Majesty, without any hindrance from the natives. We returned to the ships, and on reaching them the pilots said that they had seen the Indians bringing the cross, and that they had attempted to set it up again, and that it had fallen three or four times, and when they had perceived our people they had left it.

---

[1] This passage is somewhat confused.

After this, the brigantine was ordered to be got ready in a few days, during which Mass was said, and the natives were re-assured, because we did them no harm and they did none to us. Seeing this, one day, the 17th of May, after hearing Mass, the General went out towards the west, leaving the brigantine under a guard, and the Master of the Camp and Don Hernando and Sarmiento and fifteen soldiers went with him. And after they had gone a quarter of a league into the interior, entering a palm-grove they went up a hill, whence they saw a ravine, and on the sides of it they saw some villages, very bright and pleasant to look at, encompassed by groves of palm-trees and plantains and other trees, and many fields near the villages planted with their food, which is *pana* and *ñame*. And from that hill we saw many natives, who began to run away when they perceived us, but we re-assured them, and some of them came, and the General embraced them, showing them much friendship, telling them to assure the rest that they need not have any fear, for we were friends. And he gave a handkerchief to the chief, as he had nothing else with him, and the Indian took it and put it on his head to make a covering for it, and they thought a great deal of it, because it seems that nothing, except weapons, pleases them so much. Some dared not stay, and fled away, and others stood apart looking at what was going on. Our people went on without noticing or calling them, that they might not think that we wished to do them harm. And after having gone about three quarters of a league, we turned back to the ships, and I went with them. And we returned to some houses belonging to those who went with our people; and we went on without doing them any harm, and they remained quiet and peaceful. On our return we saw many villages upon the hills, and many plantations (*chacaras*) of food on the slopes, arranged very well so that they could irrigate them, which they did. It was well laid out; and by each cleft there was a stream of water.[1] The place whence the water came is full of trees. And so we returned to the ships under the cool shade of the trees, without inconvenience from the sun.

The brigantine being repaired, it was arranged to send her on a voyage of discovery, as had been done for the same purpose in the Island of Santa Ysabel, so as not to run the risk of losing the ships on some shoal. Don Hernando immediately made preparations, for there were to go in her as many people as the Master of the Camp took. And with him went Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, who had worked and done much service in this fleet and on the journeys. The brigantine went out on Wednesday evening, May 19th, in this year 1568.

The same day Andres Nuñez went on shore to proceed inland with twenty-two men, not counting the servants—twelve musketeers and ten shield-bearers. This expedition of Andres Nuñez inland was made with the approval of the Master of the Camp, the clergy, the Ensign-General, and the captains, in order to ascertain the quality of the land, and whether there were any minerals. And he went prepared to try any rivers and ravines that appeared likely places, to see whether there was any gold, because the Indians did not wear any, and did not even know of its existence. It is no wonder, for even if it is to be found in the land, they would not know how to work it, because they have no vessels, though they have the earth to make them. The General's orders were that, if the natives resisted and prevented them from going into the interior, they should defend themselves with moderation and should return. According to their instructions they were to take six days, three to go and three to return. The General went on shore awhile from the ships to despatch them, and the expedition departed with much love and brotherly affection. The General commanded them all not to quarrel with any of the natives, but to cultivate their friendship, and not to molest them.

---

[1] The taro is grown in terraces artificially irrigated.

About sixty men remained in the ships, counting the sailors and negroes and servants. This day made up the six months since we had sailed out from Callao, Our Lord keeping us in peace, and having great mercy upon us.

On the Thursday following, we saw that the natives were going down along the beach, laden with cocoanuts from some palm-trees which were in the port where we were anchored, the property of a chief whom our men had killed with an arquebus shot on the day when they put up the cross, as already related, whom his neighbours had eaten, and after they had eaten him, they were taking the fruit that was in his ground to finish making the obsequies. This was known because we had been keeping our eyes on these cocoanuts for our own support, since the ration of biscuits that they gave us was only eight ounces, and roots and cocoanuts had to take the place of more bread, although inadequately. When we saw the natives taking them away, the General and some soldiers and Pedro Sarmiento landed, in order to bring back as many as we could, and when we got there we saw that the Indians had taken all the ripe cocoanuts. We found two Indians, one being the chief with whom we had made friends two or three days before, and to whom the General had given several small things which we had for barter. He called to him as he stood on the other side of the river, and he and his companion came across, and the General ordered him to climb up and knock down some cocoanuts, but they took it ill; but when he pressed them, the chief said that he himself would not touch them, and made his companion go up, and he knocked down those that were ripe, which were but a few, and they brought them to the ship. He asked the Indian whose dwelling it was, and he said that it belonged to the deceased; when we asked whether they had eaten him, he laughed and said "Yes;"[1] from which we understood that all I have mentioned had actually taken place, for, when we went there, he said that we might take what we liked from the palm-trees of the dead man, but that we should not take any of the marked ones.

On Saturday, 22nd of May, we went on shore in company with the General, with the intention of going up a little hill which could be seen near the ships, so that from thence he might have a better view of the disposition of the land; and the Master of the Camp went, together with the Fathers Galvez and Torres, and Captain Sarmiento. We were twenty-seven in all, leaving the greater part of the people with the pilots, to defend the ships, which lay with their yards and topmasts struck; but they were safe, because the natives had not the means by which they could dare to do any damage; and all the time we had been stationed there we had only seen four on board. We went into the interior of the land, and after we had passed through a little thicket in the plain, we went up to the hill-tops, having some difficulty in getting up on account of the thick grass, which remains throughout the year. We saw so many villages on the hill-tops that it was marvellous, for more than thirty villages, of ten and twenty houses and more, could be counted within a league and a half of road. And all the slope round the hills was full of huts, clearings and plantations, kept in very good order, and the villages were surrounded by very tall palm-trees; and it is certain that one of these clearings would grow food enough to sustain all that we saw, as far as we could judge. We went up the little mountain that sloped from where we went towards the south-west, whence there were seen some very beautiful plains. It gave us all great pleasure, and we thanked Our Lord for permitting us to see such a peaceful country. In some parts of it there were hills, but of no great altitude, the rest being savannah. We saw much smoke in the plains, which was not surprising as the land is so densely populated. We saw some rivers, which traversed the plain and went down to the sea. We entered a small village of about seven or eight houses, but did not find anyone, and near it was another one, smaller, where there were no Indians. We sat down to rest in the village, and we took some *pana*, which we ate roasted, and we did the people no harm. We returned by another road which seemed to lead straight on; and entered another village, where there were seventy houses, placed in regular order, with a street between them, made of baskets of earth, piled against the houses. We did not see anyone in it. We went on without doing any harm. We found another wider road, under the refreshing shade of some trees, and came out upon a bare slope. And we saw five or six Indians, who fled away to hide themselves in the mountain; and although we called to them, they would not stop. We went into a ravine, whence a river descended; there we ate a little biscuit; and we went from thence to the ships, and, all the time, no Indian would wait for us. We were surprised that, we being so few, they did not attack us; and we supposed it to be because they were aware that we did no harm, except to those who injured us, and the arquebus shots sounded very loud; and yet for all this they broke peace with some of our people who had landed on the beach, and had fired some arrows and thrown stones at them; but our people had defended themselves, and put them to flight, and pursued them. And they took a boy, about six years old, from them, and they took him off to the ship.

---

[1] The native laughed at the absurdity (to him) of the suggestion that they had eaten one of their own chiefs, and his assent was ironical. The stripping of a dead man's plantation is in accordance with native custom. The marked trees were *tabu*, indicated probably by a wisp of grass or palm-leaf tied round the trunk.

At that time no rations were issued but eight ounces of biscuit, as has been said above, and half a pound of salt meat, and sometimes it was very bad; and our roots were finished, and our people were worn out, both from having little to eat and from sickness, and they complained a good deal, asking the General to send for some food, and their cause was justified towards the Indians, for they had several times offered them barter for it, and they would not agree to it, as the clergy were aware. Seeing this, the General decided to send, Pedro Sarmiento on shore with as many of the men as he could spare from the ships, to forage. And he departed with thirty-two people on Thursday [Sunday], the 23rd of May, after having heard Mass. They went eastward in a boat, about a league along the sea-coast. They landed, and went into a village that contained about thirty houses. They did not find any people in it; they had all gone into the hills. He [Sarmiento] called to them and begged them to give us food, but with no result. He then repeated his request, displaying things for barter, but equally without result; and seeing this, we determined to go into the houses and take some; and marshalling our people, Sarmiento ordered some of them to examine the houses, and they found some food hidden away and with great trouble they carried it down to the boat. Whilst they were carrying it down, some natives came to the men that had charge of the boat; these went inland and brought some bundles of wood, as though they were bringing them for the fire which our people had made, and on which they were roasting roots to eat; and together with the wood they brought some cudgels (*manezueles*) made on purpose to commit some villainy, and their plan was for some of them to come as if with peaceful intentions, and seize our people by the arms, and for the rest to strike them with the cudgels, and take them away bound with ropes, which some of them had brought. And our people being so few, they could have set to work, and would have succeeded had it not been for the soldiers who went and came with those who were bringing away the food, who fell upon them in their act of treachery, and drove them off; but they would not go, notwithstanding that our people spoke to them several times, and instead they came in greater numbers, paying no attention, although our men threatened them. And when our people saw that there were one hundred Indians, and that more were assembling, and that our people were only four, and that, should they get into a difficulty, our people could obtain no succour, as the greater part were in the village, which was far off, they fired an arquebus shot and killed one, and the rest fled away. There was one Indian who actually came to feel the legs of a soldier who stood there, by way of testing whether he were tender for eating, as he would be his share in the distribution which they had made.

On the Monday following, he [Sarmiento] went with about thirty men, and I went with them. We went further than we had been before. We arrived at one of the rivers which we had discovered when we were upon the little hill, and we gave it the name of the San Urbano. The river was shallow at the entrance, and the boat could not pass up it. We reached it before daybreak, and the houses of the Indians were so near to the beach that our people heard them talking in the houses, and their coarse laughter, as they said "*Namboles*,"[1] that is to say, "pigs," and saying "*May nabolos*" [*sic*], and laughing much. We understood what this was, because a soldier had given them a handkerchief to induce them to bring a pig, and they had returned it. We understood that they had made a feast of the dead Indian that night; and afterwards in conversation they made jokes about us, because we had asked them for pigs and food. We waited till it was day, because we could not see the land, and they perceived us; and when they saw that we were so near, they gave a great yell, and immediately began to flee away, some to the mountain, and some across the river, and not one would return, although we called to them in friendly tones, telling them in their language not to be afraid. Some of them collected together in a squadron, although not well formed, and we put ourselves in order. And some of the servants went into the houses to see whether there was any food, but did not find any. There were then about one thousand Indians upon the beach. We passed on, and the natives followed after us, yelling at us, and some got into the canoes with their wives and children, and although we called to them several times, they would not come. Our people made signs of peace, and some of them approached, although in trepidation, but presently they turned to go, for they did not think that they were safe. We crossed the river twice, but we found no food; and presently we went to another part of the river to another village, and we found some Indians, but still they fled from us. And when we persuaded them, one Indian of a fine figure came, and we laid hold of him to take him to the ship; he was so strong, that although eight men were at him, we could not bring him to the ground. We bound him, and sent him to the ship, and the General reprimanded the action, saying that the interpreters from the end of the other island would be better, because they would understand one another more through their intercourse, as we had seen by experience, because one, that we had brought from Meta, understood the language of Guadalcanal a little, and the one from Canbano[1] understood it. When the Indian had been sent to the ship, he [Sarmiento] gave us another order, which was to press on up a high hill to see the disposition of the land, and we saw a pretty valley, with its houses and plantations. Presently he returned with those he had taken with him; and when they arrived, we went up the beach to the place where we had taken the food the day before. And on the road we found a little food in a small village. And he went into another to see whether there was any, with directions that if he found any, he should make signals to us. And he found some, and he made signals with a piece of cloth, and from another mountain top people made signals with another, and it was the people of Andres Nuñez, who had come from their journey into the interior. Presently we embarked, and we gave notice of the return of Andres Nuñez. And they took the food to the *Almiranta*.

---

[1] *Na mbolo* = the pig. The natives were enjoying what is still an inexhaustible source of diversion—mimicry of Europeans.

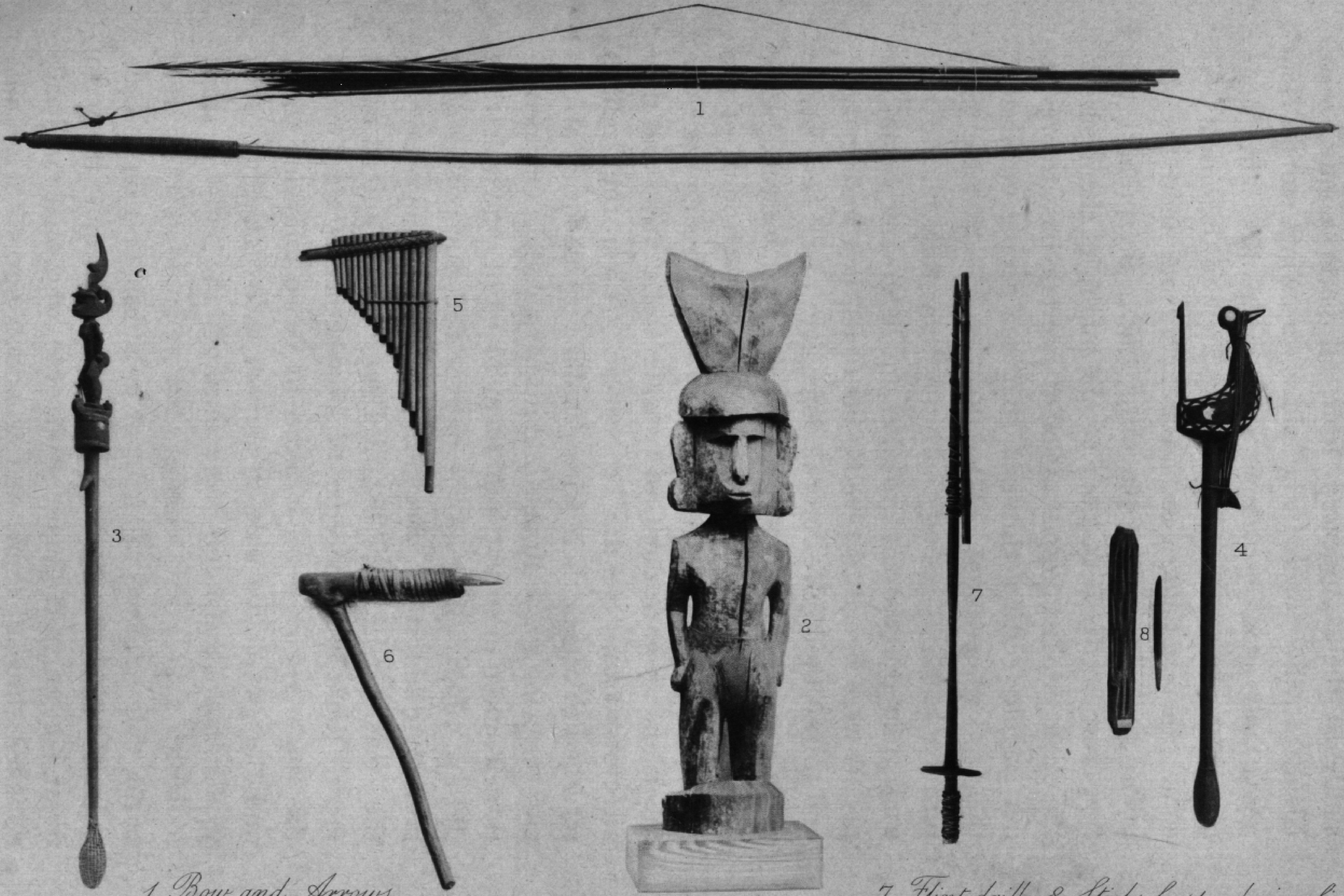
On the Tuesday following, May 25th, the General went on shore to hear Mass, and everybody with him. After we had heard Mass, we went a little way inland, and in one of the villages we found some pit-holes in the sand, and in them we found a quantity of food that they had hidden; and our people began to take it off to the boats. And two Indians came to us, and they likewise pretended to search, but they did not find any, because they did not want us to take it away.

---

[1] Canbano seems to be the village in Estrella Bay spelt Canball elsewhere, and Samba by Mendaña, the *C* being soft.

Presently Andres Nuñez, who had slept near that place, arrived, and he brought his people in very tired. And thereupon we embarked and they unloaded the food into the *Capitana*, at which the Master of the Camp was angry, saying that what they had given before for his ship was of very little profit. However, it was not done on purpose.

This is the account that Andres Nuñez brought. As I have said above, he left on the 19th of May with twenty-two soldiers and two Indians for interpreters. As soon as they disembarked they went from the sea-coast, determined to follow the road into the interior towards the South, cautiously and in good order, which was necessary on account of the number of people there appeared to be in this part of the country. It so happened that when they set out to march a great number of Indians followed after them, yelling continually and attacking them from time to time, firing arrows at the rear-guard, with which the said Andres had remained, for so it appeared best to him. They were all that day going two leagues in this manner, and they found a village where there was a quantity of huts arranged together; and he entered into one, determined to wait there and breakfast, for the people were wearied with the steepness of the road. The natives put themselves under arms, and began to shoot arrows among the houses. Although he [Nuñez] put up with it for a little time, and begged them to cease, as they were their friends and would not do them any harm, he saw that his gentleness did not make any impression, and that, in order to quiet them, some force was necessary for his defence. Whilst this was happening, an Indian fired an arrow and hit a soldier in the chest, but the arrow broke and did him no harm; and when they saw what they had done, they gave a loud yell. Andres Nuñez ordered the soldiers to do their duty, and despatched three or four to reconnoitre the mountain side with the dogs. When the natives saw that they could do little to annoy our people with their arms, they left the village and fled. And as there was no convenience for reposing there, Andres Nuñez presently set out and went on to a stream of water, where they fed and rested a little; and all the time that they were eating, our people were surrounded by the Indians on all sides, who kept on shouting and sounding their conchs and horns, giving the war-cry. And after they had eaten and rested, they departed to pursue their journey, and the natives kept on following them and shooting arrows; and about a league and a half from this stream, at a bad part of a decline, they made an ambuscade of four musketeers and four soldiers; and the Indians came along the road and arrived almost on the top of them, and our people fired at them, but did not hit them, though they frightened them, and made them turn and go away; and it answered their purpose, for the Indians left off following them, as they saw that there might always be ambuscades. And a little further on they entered a small village of about three hundred Indians. And when they saw our people, they sent their women and children into the mountain; and they went out of the village and our people went in. And the Indians that were following them and the people of the village remained near by. And as it was late, Andres Nuñez sent a soldier with an Indian as interpreter, to speak to them, offering them friendship and peace; and thus a peace was arranged, and Andres Nuñez gave them some small bells and beads, and all the people of the village went to sleep in their houses. Next morning they pursued their journey below a very steep face of the mountain, above a river; and after they had arrived at the river, all the natives of that territory, when they saw them, put themselves under arms, on account of what they had seen the day before, and all those and the rest of them came upon the rear-guard; and when our people had rested they set about prospecting (*les maron de dar cata*). And suddenly there appeared from all parts a number of islanders, who covered the place, throwing stones from above and shooting arrows from the plains, skirmishing (*dandoles guazabura*). And among them in the crowd were some other Indians, who had followed our men the day before with bunches of plantains, under the pretext that they were a gift, so that our people might let them pass to the other side to take possession of a certain pass to prevent our people getting through; but our people understood this, and they would not let them pass, but made them turn back. And seeing the hurry they were in, and that each time the natives crowded up in greater haste, our people were forced to give up the trials they were making, and to put themselves on the defensive. And because the place was not convenient for defence, and there was a better one more fitted for the purpose on the other point of the river, they went there; and as they were crossing the river, the islanders gave them many volleys of stones; and they all crossed over to the other side. Then the Indians returned to attack them with greater fury, shooting arrows and throwing great stones, and uttering yells. Our people turned upon them and put them to flight, and this they did five times. And as the natives fled, our people went into some huts that were near; but when they saw that they persisted [in their hostility], our people agreed to set fire to these huts, in order to see whether by that means the Indians would be induced to cease following them, and they would be able to pursue their journey. And whilst they [the huts] were burning, the natives stood looking on in great silence; but as soon as they were burnt, they returned to shoot at us afresh; and our people quickly turned to fight them, and again put them to flight, and pursued them. And a lad, who went on ahead, attacked three of them, and wounded one with a knife,



1. Bow and Arrows. 7. Flint drill. 8. Sticks for producing fire.
2. Figure supporting a beam, from a house in Ulawa I. 3. Fishing-float (Ulawa) 4. Fishing-float (Malaita) 5. Panpipes. 6. Shell adze.

and the musketeers killed four of them, as was afterwards learnt from them. And after that they left us for a time, and our people returned to the place where they had burned the huts, and they took some food and rested. And after a little while they left this place, because, being between two high ridges, it was a bad position, where they might receive injuries from their assailants. And they determined to go up the river, to see whether they could get up to the top of the hill. So they crossed the river two or three times above, to see whether they could find any incline by which to go up, and for this purpose they went up the river; and at the fifth time they could not wade it; and they turned to come back to the place whence they had set out, in order to take the road in a better place, and so they did. And seeing that it was late, and the hill-side dangerous, and the Indians numerous, they left it for another day. They lodged there that night in one of the huts which was at the foot of the slope, for they were determined to ascend it on the following day. And whilst they were lodging there, the natives returned, throwing stones and arrows to drive them out. And then Andres Nuñez told the interpreter to speak to them, saying that he would not do them any harm as long as they were his friends; and the interpreter told them so, and asked for food. And presently they brought a pig and made signs of peace to our people, and he gave them a cap and a string of beads. And it was decided that eight men should go out before dawn, and gain the summit, and so they went and reached it. And they went near a village of the Indians where they placed themselves in an ambuscade, waiting for the chief and the rest of the people. They were guarding the pass, and averting the dangers which might come from above. But whilst they were in the ambuscade, one of the dogs that they had brought with them barked, and our people were discovered by the natives; but for all this they remained without changing their position till their companions arrived; and the Indians all fled from the village. And when the rest came they joined all together and rested, and took their ease; and whilst they were there they heard cocks crow like those in Castille, at which they were much pleased. When day broke, they went away from thence, and went to the village and found many hens and cocks, like those of Castille; but they flew about a great deal from tree to tree, and they could not catch them; nevertheless, they caught a white cock and hen.[1] And they pursued their journey from that village, which they found good and broad, with many pig tracks. And they went to a large village beyond it, in which there were more than one hundred and fifty huts, and more than seven hundred fighting men, and a house belonging to the *tauriqui*, most sumptuously fitted up. The village is called *Tayla* and the chief Tuadubi. There they gave them water and cocoanuts and a pig, and the same people that brought it carried it a league further on to another village, where they left it, and returned. Our people could not remain there, because there was no water. From thence they reconnoitred the land, which they saw was very rugged on the south of the range of hills. And presently they went on about a league and a half on the left hand to another village, where they passed the night.

On Saturday morning, having seen the disposition of the land to be what I have said, they decided to return in order to carry off the sick, and also because food and ammunition were running short; and they began to march towards the sea, whence they had set out, going down by a river below the one by which they had come. They began to prospect in it, to see whether there was any *humo*, or pearl, or coral. Whilst they were making this trial, the natives hindered them, shooting arrows and stoning them from above; but in spite of all this they made a trial, and the miners went digging in the water, and they said that there was not time enough to test it, because of the great body of water coming down the river from the mountains; and so they left it. They went down the river, following its course without being able to come out, the Indians continually shooting arrows and stoning them. And presently they came upon another larger river, and on the banks was a village, and when they wished to go to it a great number of natives obstructed them with arrows and stones with great determination; and they defended the ascent for a long while, although four musketeers and four soldiers went up to gain it; but on account of the great trouble that our men took they gained it, and so, defending themselves, the rest, who were following as they went up and gained it, came up safe. On arriving at this village, Andres Nuñez recognised an Indian as being one of those of the large village in the interior. And having spoken to them through the interpreter they were all pacified, and brought water and a pig, and several cocoanuts; and our men slept that day at the village.

---

[1] See remarks on the indigenous fowl on p. lxxxii of the Introduction.

On the Sunday morning they left this place, and turned across the river that they had passed the day before, for it appeared likely to contain gold. And when they reached it, the miners thought the current too strong, and the place unsuitable for making trials. And for that reason they passed on to sleep at a village where they found hens and cocks of Castille of all colours; and before arriving at the river, they found some sweet almonds.[1] Our people slept there, for they were very tired with the journey.

On Monday morning they left that village to sleep at one league's distance from the ships, without further impediment, except that the Indians followed them continually to see what they were doing.

---

[1] The fruit of the *Canarium commune.*

On Tuesday morning they all arrived at the ships, safe from wounds, thanks be to God, although two were ill from fever.

When the Master of the Camp saw that the food which they had brought for his ship on the previous Monday was insufficient, and that more roots were spoiled than those that could be used, he wished to go in person to seek some; and, seeing that there were more persons in the ship through the return of Andres Nuñez, he went out in his boat before daybreak on Wednesday, the 26th day of May. He went to the river San Urbano. He ascended it a little way, although with difficulty, for he carried twenty-six persons, counting soldiers, sailors, and servants. He went further up than Pedro Sarmiento. They arrived at a village which had more than two hundred houses, where they found food. The Master of the Camp formed up his people so that the Indians could not approach on any side without being seen, and they ordered the servants to load themselves and carry the food to the boat. It happened that whilst they were getting food (for the Indians were making a noise and yelling outside, showing that they wished to fight our people, as they had put themselves under arms), a negro belonging to Francisco Nuñez saw the bustle amongst the Indians and heard their clamour, and thought that he would go to the place where his master was, who he thought would be fighting; and thinking that he had hit the road that led to the entrance of the village, he went through a plantation of canes which was near the village, where some Indians were hidden; and he came upon them. And when the Indians saw that he was alone, they set upon him with lances and clubs and stones and arrows, in such a manner that, had not our people run to his assistance when they heard the noise, the Indians would have killed him. But our people fought them with such good will that they killed some and others fled away badly wounded. And the Master of the Camp made them hang up one of the dead Indians by the foot. The negro received nine wounds: four should have been mortal, but he did not die, for it pleased Our Lord to preserve him. He behaved so valiantly that he killed two with the sword and wounded many; and with God's help his courage prevailed, for had he become fainthearted, they would have finished him, for it was some little time before our men heard what was going on.

On the following day, Thursday, the day of the Ascension of Our Redeemer, after dinner, a dreadful thing happened. It was this. The steward of the ship wanted to go for water, and it had been ordered that no one should leave the ship without permission. He had been in the habit of going with two negroes, but when they saw the restlessness of the Indians, they had ordered him not to go, and for this reason he asked the General for leave. As it was a feast-day he forbade him to go, but the steward explained how much need they had of water, and upon this the General ordered them to give him two arquebusiers and two soldiers to go with him; and when they were in the boat, the General warned them to be careful, and look where they were going, and not to do any violence, because they had noticed how changed the Indians had become; and that none should leave the boat except those who were to get the water. The person in charge was Juan de Salas, an old soldier, whom they held in great esteem, and who had always said that they should not trust the natives. And with this they departed, saying that they would act accordingly. And a little while after they had gone, we saw coming to the sea-beach a number of Indians, who came from the river of San Urbano towards the river Gallego, and they sat down on the beach. And little by little more than two hundred came, and all the time more arrived. And presently we saw a squadron of them coming over the hills, as many as sixty, and none of these went to the beach, nor did any of those who were there move from it. They appeared to be resting there; and as at other times they were wont to behave in this manner, no account was taken of them until we saw many Indians descending from the mountains; then it appeared to us that something was amiss. It seemed to us that they were about to attack one of the soldiers who were taking care of the fishing-net which was spread out to dry; and seeing that, in order to attack them, they had first to cross the river, and that we had no boat in which we could go to their assistance, we aimed a piece at the body of Indians, who stood on the beach, so as to have it ready if it were necessary. Having done this, we saw the squadrons which had come down from the height—which is on the side of the river opposite to the place where our people were — ascend another height, nearer the ships, having crossed the river; and while we were watching them, it was seen that they were going to attack those who had gone for water; and some would not believe it, thinking that the Indians would not dare. Whilst this discussion was proceeding, we saw another company running, and judging that they would not go in that manner without reason, we called out to the *Almiranta* to bring the boat. They brought it, although not so quickly as was necessary. The General went in it, with all the people that it would hold, with the greatest possible haste. We went on shore, and on the way we saw some Indians, who made grimaces at us, holding up the leg or arm of a dead man, which sight we took to be a bad omen. We disembarked, and immediately an arquebusier and a soldier went to where our people were who were taking care of the boat, so that they should be put on their guard, because they had only seen the people that were on the beach; and as they had only come as at other times, they were indifferent to them. We went along the beach to where the water was, running with all the people, and when we arrived near, we saw a negro belonging to the party which had gone in the boat on a little island near the shore, whither he had gone swimming, and he called out to us, saying that they had murdered the people; and hearing this, we left the road by the beach, and we crossed the bush at about two shots length, thinking to intercept the Indians. We got up to a clear place, but we did not see anyone. We went to the hill-top, whence they had come down, and we saw that along some other high ground inland more squadrons of Indians than we had seen go up were passing from one part to the other, and the greater number of those we saw were going down to the river San Urbano. They were so far off when we saw them that we could not have overtaken them on horseback. The savages had hoisted the white clothes which they had taken from our people, for flags. We had thought that they might have some of them prisoners, which would have given us hope of ransoming them, but this was now impossible. We returned with much sorrow towards the spot where the boat was, and when we arrived mid-way we found the Master of the Camp, who, seeing us go down with the haste aforesaid, had put himself on a raft with all the people he could carry of those whom he had brought down the day before from the river San Urbano. This sortie on the raft was very rash, as there was much wind and sea. The Master of the Camp said that he had found nine of our men dead and cut in pieces, and that he had had them put in a boat so that he might take them away for burial. They took them to the river Gallego, and when they laid them in the ground it was such a sad sight to behold them that it nearly broke our hearts: because of the ten men who had gone in the boat (and never before had so many gone, or any better equipped), only one had escaped; and the dead were cut in pieces, some without legs and without arms, others without heads, and the ends of all their tongues were cut off, and their eye-teeth drawn, and those whose heads were left had had the skulls cut open and the brains eaten: a very great and abominable cruelty. We buried them near the place where Mass was said; and while we were burying them, it seemed to some of our people that there were Indians on the point, near the spot where our people had perished. Pedro Sarmiento went there with some people to burn a hut which was there, lest they should come and disinter the dead and take them away, because they said that the natives were watching what we were doing. Pedro Sarmiento went, but did not see any Indians, and he thought it better to go on, and he set fire to some little villages that he found; and having done this, he returned to the place where we were. And we returned to the ships, with the intention of inflicting, if we were able, the chastisement which their treason and cruelty deserved. The names of the murdered people were as follows: Juan de Salas, an old man, and married in Lima; the Indians took away his head; Luys de Herrera, who was a servant of Your Lordship; Lamo de Trexo [or Trejo], a young person; a mulatto, servant of the General, who was called Gaspar Alvares; Juan Perez, a Biscayan, the steward, a very passionate man; two slaves belonging to Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, and they took away the head of one; one negro, belonging to Pedro Ramos, the boatswain; the negro Herrero, belonging to His Majesty. The negro of the Chief Pilot only escaped, who told us how they were killed. He said that they had got the supply of water, and had left the boat stranded; and that, whilst they were launching it, the Indians came upon them. The arquebusiers were in the boat, and would have fired, but one, on account of being confused, could not get a light, and the other, owing to a blow from a wave, which struck him as he was standing on the thwarts, fell and wetted his fuse; one of the negroes of the Chief Pilot fought with a cutlass like a Cæsar, and made the Indians retire; but while he was doing this they killed him, and before he died, with his cutlass he chopped off the arm of one man. And the first negro, seeing that the affair was ending badly, had set out swimming, and had got over to the island, and some Indians followed him, swimming, and he turned upon them with his cutlass and made them flee. And in this manner he had escaped. And when the natives saw that we were coming on shore in the boat, they fled away quickly, and they killed three of our people in the boat. This was not taken for being quite true; it was rather thought that our men had gone to gather cocoanuts, and that when they were about to embark, the Indians had laid hands on them, although it was unfavourable to this view that some of the dead were found in the boat; and this gives some credit to the negro's statement, and the fact that the dead bore wounds from their own swords, and had neither arrow nor lance wounds; and it was clear that the Indians intended rather to attack those who were taking care of the net, but when they found this opportunity they availed themselves of it; and it was so believed, because those who came from the west had but very little time, and finding the negro so ready, they fell unexpectedly upon the others. And they had taken each his piece, and grinned at us with them. We learned that this treachery had been planned and ordered by a *tauriqui* named Nano; he was the lord of that island, and we had taken him for a friend, and had given him many articles of barter; and, had he not given his consent, the people from other parts beyond would not have dared to come there to do this deed, nor have entered upon his territory to carry out the work.

On the Friday following, the 28th of May, Pedro Sarmiento departed on the first punitive expedition, with orders to set fire to the huts and villages that he found, for it was evident that the natives would not wait for him. He went, and burned many villages that he found, both on the hills and on the plains. The Indians never ventured to come out, nor fight our people, although they saw them go and burn their villages; but as they came on, they made an ambuscade in a cane plantation, arranged as skilfully as they could. They made a false ambuscade containing a few people, so that the Spaniards might destroy it, and might then be led in pursuit of them. And they had another one made, entirely concealed, in which there were about a thousand men ready to come down behind our people.[1] They put Captain Sarmiento and four or five others in great danger, for they did pursue after the Indians, who fled, but Our Lord was pleased to preserve them, and they returned to join the others; and scarcely had they gone a gun-shot distance from where they had found the first ambuscade, than a dog, that they had with them in the advance guard, scented the Indians, and began barking in the direction of the cane plantation, and as he had betrayed their hiding-place, our people attacked them with very great courage, and made them flee to the heights above and along the beach, and they fired upon those that came down to the latter with the artillery from the ships, and when the Indians heard it, no one dared to come on to the beach. Our people made another ambuscade by allowing them to suppose that all had embarked, and they sent the boats to the ships with a few of the camp-followers, so that they might make a show; but they were found out by the natives, and consequently they were not able to do anything. Notwithstanding this, they killed more than twenty Indians that day, and wounded as many more. It seemed that this day Our Lord had ordained that the Indians should pay the penalty of their misdeeds, for at more than 500 yards, from one ridge to the other, which is a range for a musket, they killed Indians with the arquebuses.

---

[1] This is a common device in Melanesian warfare. Similar tactics were successful in destroying a strong party from the ship *Hunter* in 1812, at Wailea in Fiji, where the device is called *A Lawa*, the net (see Dillon's *Voyage*, vol. i, p. 9).

On the following day the said Pedro Sarmiento went inland, along the coast westward, and burned some villages, which with those of the day before made about 300 houses, and they did not find any Indians to wait for them; they all fled inland at his coming. They saw about a dozen Indians following them. These made an ambuscade, but when our men reached it, they fired at it with the arquebuses, each man hitting his mark, and they wounded them badly. And one of them fled with a wound which went through from one shoulder to the other, and lest he should be taken, because he could not get inland to the mountain, he threw himself into the sea, and the boat went after him, but it was almost a league before they could overtake him. They took him to the ship, that he might inform them who had been concerned in the murder of our companions, and where they, who had killed them, lived. When he began to recover, they questioned him about the matter through the interpreter, but he dissembled, saying that he belonged to another country, and that he was an enemy of Nano. Then they pressed him a little, but he said no more, except that they who had done it were of the party of Lunga, who lived near the river of San Urbano. They secured him and tended him.

Next day, after Mass, the General sent to call the Master of the Camp to prepare our people to go to the tribe of

Lunga to chastise it. And some, it appeared, were not disposed to go there until the brigantine returned, because they were very ill, and that province was thickly populated, for when the Master of the Camp went (which he ought not to have done) he had seen more than three thousand men; and now these would be on their guard, and they had been given to understand that the Indians had assembled there, but when they [the brigantine's crew] returned there would be twenty men more, and ten of them arquebusiers. And having heard this opinion, the General agreed with it and yielded.

We were at that time expecting the arrival of the brigantine, and Our Lord was pleased that on the day of Pentecost, which is the 6th of June, we should see her appearing round a point, which gave us great pleasure, and we greeted them, and none were missing and none were wounded. There were five or six ill of fever. They gave an account of how they had discovered many lands, of their exploits, and the discovery that they had made; and the account which they brought is as follows:

THE SECOND VOYAGE OF THE BRIGANTINE.

On the 19th of May, she set out from Puerto de La Cruz. They went along the shore rowing, because the wind was contrary, but at night it blew from off the land. They set sail and went ahead all night. At daybreak they had travelled 8 leagues, without losing sight of the coast. In this place they sighted a village on the shore, consisting of twelve huts, and the wind being contrary they could go no further.[1] The Chief Pilot thinking it best to put in there, they anchored to await better weather. Immediately many natives of other villages, which were in sight, began to assemble on the shore. They thought it as well to land in order to see what was in the huts. Don Hernando disembarked with twenty soldiers, and on landing, he called to some Indians to approach and haul at a rope, in order to beach the brigantine; and they did so willingly. And he embraced them, and spoke to them in a friendly manner, asking them for food, but they would not give it, and asked our people to return to the vessel, when they would bring some; and he gave them to understand that he would pay them for whatever they might bring to him, but it was of no use. Seeing this, our people began to enter the village, to see what was in the huts, but they could not find any food, except three or four fish. From this they judged them to be fishermen; and, lest they should become turbulent, seeing that there were already more than five hundred of them, besides others who were coming from the interior of the country, they turned back to embark without doing them harm. Now, to return to what occurred with the Indians who were holding the rope of the brigantine: it happened that when they were told to let go, they would not do so, because they saw that our people were on board; and on seeing the efforts of the sailors to wrench it from their hands, they laughed much at the game they were playing them; and a Greek, holding a flag, threw himself out of the brigantine to go to them, having a sword in his hand, and this caused not only them to flee but more than one hundred others as well, who were near them; and when those who were in the prow shouted to Don Hernando, because he was on the poop, and had not seen this, he came forward; and when the barbarians saw him turn back, one of them advanced, brandishing a club, and others behind him; and had they not fired upon him with an arquebus, they would have come to blows. They fled immediately, and the Greek came on board. Don Hernando wanted to chastise him, and scolded him roundly.

---

[1] At this season the trade-wind drops at nightfall, and the land breeze sets in until after sunrise. The Spaniards were adopting the custom now followed by the traders.

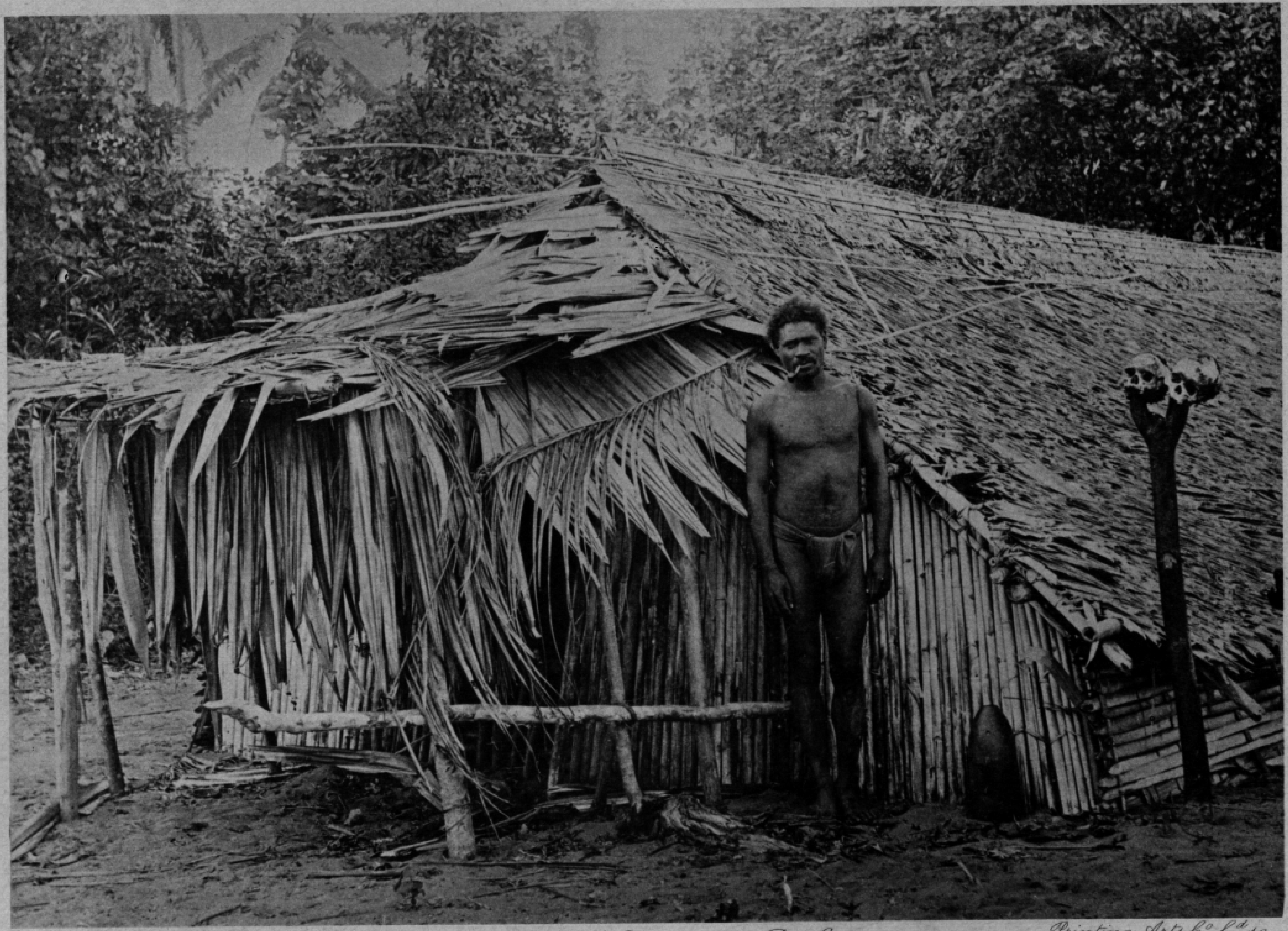
We set sail at once, but, as the wind was contrary, we again anchored there, and the same people changed their minds, for they brought a dozen cocoa-nuts, and put them at the water's edge, calling to our people to come and take them; and as our people would not do so, they thought that it was through fear, and took them back again, shouting and scoffing, and they threw the shells to them into the sea in a defiant manner; and then began to throw many stones at our people, which came very near the brigantine. Don Hernando ordered an arquebus to be fired to frighten them, and they fled immediately, but shortly afterwards they returned, and some of them, five in number, betook themselves to swimming. Our people wondered at their daring to do so, after they had spoken so rudely to us and thrown stones at us, but it was thought to be because they had not been molested when they had thrown the stones. They came to the brigantine laden with cocoa-nuts and roots. Don Hernando helped them to come on board, and embraced them, and ordered something to be given them to eat; and he gave them beads in payment for the food, and with this they departed content.

Near this village there is a small river, and, urged by Hernando Gallego, they voyaged that night by means of the oars, and discovered a very large river.[1] The name of San Bernaldino was given to it, because they discovered it on his day. They anchored at the mouth of it, because the weather was foul, and set sail again the following night, and travelled 3 leagues, for they could do no more.

On the day following, the 21st of May, at the hour o

---

[1] Nalimbiu River.



Printing Arts C.º L.td sc.

Native of Lango (Nalimbiu R. Guadalcanar)

Showing two skulls captured by headhunters & a shell fired at Florida I. in punishment for the murder of Lieut: Bower in 1880.

sunrise, Don Hernando landed with such people as he could take with him. He thought well to go some distance into the country, in order to see what was there, as there seemed to be great plains. They went through the forest and found it cut down. They heard a noise of Indians, and went to the place where they were. As soon as these saw them, they went fleeing before our people, making a loud outcry. They followed them until they reached a village, which consisted of thirty houses, standing somewhat apart one from the other, surrounded with many plantations and groves of plantains, the whole being kept in good order; and near the houses were many herbs of different colours, fenced with canes, and it gave them pleasure, because they smelt sweet. They went round about it, and found good and clean lodging there. All this time the Indians followed behind them with much anxiety, bidding them depart; and although they called to them, and told them to have no fear, as they were not going to do them any harm, they would not approach. They asked them for food, for which they would pay them, showing them beads. They would not bring any, but became riotous, and began shouting, beating their drums to assemble the people. And seeing that nothing could be done with them, Don Hernando ordered the shield-bearers to look into the houses, wherein they found a quantity of food; and in a large house [they found] a large canoe, which they made use of for carrying food to the sea, down a river which was near. They took away some [of the food], and when the natives saw this, they approached with loud cries, though they did not dare to attack; and when our people began to return, some women threw three or four stones at them; and they fired two arquebus shots in the air, and the Indians all fled. Don Hernando ordered two strings of beads to be hung at the doors of the hut from which they had taken the food; and so they came along the shore, down the river, guarding the canoe. Thereupon many Indians began to assemble on the sea-shore, and they approached, making signs of peace. Don Hernando spoke to them before embarking, and requested them to bring two pigs, and then he would give them back their canoe. They said that they would do so, and our people embarked. They put off a stone's throw from the land, and then some of the Indians came out swimming, and brought some food, and among them was a man, blind of one eye. This man used artifice with them, and while swimming he spoke with Don Hernando, and said that they had already gone for the *nanbolos*, meaning the pigs, which would soon come. Then about a dozen came and placed themselves upon some fishing poles where we were moored. The one-eyed man did nothing but go backwards and forwards to the land, where they were holding a meeting and chapter there, which lasted a long time; and more than a thousand Indians assembled on the shore, and tried to deceive them, and to make game of them in the following manner: [the one-eyed man] sent two Indians running to make a dummy of grass, and to bring it upon a pole; meanwhile he came to the brigantine, saying that the *nanbolo* was coming immediately; and the Indians were not very long coming in all haste with the dummy pig, made with grass; and the one-eyed man told them to look how it was being brought, and asked them to let the canoe go. They brought it to the shore, and our people saw that it did not move, and understood the deceit and hoax they were playing on them. And when those who were astride the fishing poles saw that our people were not going for it, which was what they wished them to do, so that they might seize the canoe, they betook themselves to swimming, and one of them passed under the stern and took hold of the canoe. Don Hernando ordered a soldier to get into it, and give him a blow, but he could not reach him ; and the rest of the Indians, although they saw this, tried to lay hands on it to take it by force, and those who were on land began to make great outcries, and to beat their drums ; and they howled like wolves, which made a noise as of devils ; and thus they, in all about eighty, approached with much courage, with their bows and arrows and clubs, which they carried in one hand above the head while swimming. Don Hernando ordered our people to place themselves in order, each one at the post which had been assigned to him ; and as the Indians came near, they fired several arquebuses at them, but they went ducking in the water, so that, as there was some sea on, and they only kept their heads out of the water and ducked, none of them could be killed, although they took aim at an Indian who, whilst swimming, shot an arrow at us, and then put his head under water ; the ball struck his bow and broke it, and another Indian's club was struck. By these means they were frightened off, and they returned to land, although they continued swimming for more than half an hour, calling to the rest to come in and aid them. Hernando Gallego took the trick which they had tried to play on them much to heart, and insisted that they should land and give them a lesson for their audacity. He was so much annoyed that, in order not to displease him, Don Hernando said that he was agreeable ; and while Gallego's anger was gradually cooling, he ordered them to get ready, but afterwards he said to him that it was not right to go and do them harm, because they [the Indians] were the aggrieved parties, and this could not be done without killing many of them ; and upon this he [Gallego] refrained himself. And when it grew dusk, they departed thence, and rowed on for more than a league, until it was night ; and throughout the night they did not set sail, because the wind was contrary.

Next day, Saturday, they navigated so as to get round the point of certain reefs, which were near a river, in order to take shelter therein, because the breeze began to increase so much that it was necessary for them to anchor; and as the sea was running very high, it was necessary to turn back and seek shelter, so as not to drag [the anchor] and come broadside on to the reefs; and, without sail or oar, they drifted towards the shore at a great speed. At this time there were more than one thousand five hundred Indians on the shore, for most of those who had *met them* the day before had come thither; and when the Indians saw the brigantine coming in shore on that tack, they thought our men would be lost by coming broadside on, and that they would have an easy prize. They began to rejoice greatly, and to arm themselves, and to shout and beat their war-drums. Our men anchored a short distance from land—it might be about a good stone's throw—and when the Indians saw this, which was not what they desired, they threw themselves into the water with great fury; and more than a hundred of them came swimming with their arms and clubs, bows, arrows and lances, to seize the brigantine, and those on land made warlike demonstrations with loud cries. Then they saw one, who was endeavouring to take the lead, swimming and approaching, with a cocoa-nut in his hand which he threw at our men, as one who throws a glove at his enemy. And an arquebus was fired at him, which struck him in the breast, and he went to the bottom immediately, leaving the water tinged with blood. And then they fired at another who was riding on a pole, making ferocious threats, saying that he was going to kill and eat them all, and calling to those on land to come in and kill them; and immediately he fell dead. When those who were near these saw them killed, they with one accord fled back to land; but others who had not seen them, continued swimming for more than half an hour, with fierce threats, but it was no use firing at them. And one Indian swam about all the time over the anchor, and did nothing but dive to take hold of it; and although they fired several arquebus shots at him, none of them hit him, because he always kept under water. And when they were tired, they all went away. There was one Indian who afterwards shot two arrows at us while swimming. A good while after they had gone ashore, our people, having no water or wood, were forced to land there also to obtain some. They began to approach the shore with the brigantine, and when the Indians saw them, they armed themselves and began to make bulwarks of holes in the sand, where they could not be seen. Our men could not reach the land, because it was shallow, and because there was a great force of Indians at the place where they had to land; and, as they would have to disembark in the canoe in two loads, it seemed to all that it would be perilous to go in this manner. It was agreed, therefore, in order to drive the Indians away from the place where they had to disembark, that they should first fire at them with the culverin, and hereby were killed two Indians whom the rest took away, dragging them along; and by this means they were driven off for some distance, but not far. So the half of our men, eight in number, leaped ashore and attacked the Indians, and put them to flight, and the rest disembarked. And they crossed one mouth of the river, which had two large mouths, running into the sea. When the natives saw that our men were few, and they themselves many, they rallied and returned to attack them on four sides, and our people met them in good order. Our people received them in such a manner that in a short time they left them in possession of the field, although they attacked with great courage, but they had the worst of it. And in the three squadrons our men killed one Indian out of each squadron, so that five died in that battle, without any damage being] done to our men. And as far as their eyes could see, there was not an Indian visible, and our men remained alone upon the shore. They went up from the shore (where they found many *chacaras*[1] full of *yñames* and *panahes*, very well situated near some high hills) to find water, because it was salt at the mouth of the river, and two arquebusiers went up it in the canoe, and they ascended it for more than a quarter of a league without being able to find any, until they came to a village with much verdure, which gave them great pleasure to look at, because it had a great many good and clean huts. In the two largest there were four Indian calabashes placed at the doors, and a *mate* of wood with cocoanut milk, so thick and white that it looked like cow's milk; and smelt like cream, and on some leaves a stew of it, which looked like rice.[2] They ate some of it, and were pleased with the taste. They could not find where to get any water, because so far all that they had found was salt. In order not to leave the brigantine, they turned back and came down by the sea-shore, with the brigantine in sight about half a league distant, to look for some, but they did not find any; and rather than go without it, they crossed with the canoe to the other side of the river to see whether there was any there. And when the natives saw this, they came out to prevent them from coming to their village, making signs of peace. Each one came loaded with cocoanuts; and they approached our people with much fear. Don Hernando spoke to them in a friendly manner, embracing the *tauriqui* and others. They gave them the pitchers, and they brought the water, appearing to do it willingly, for although it was a long way off, they came back very quickly. Don Hernando gave the *tauriqui* a handkerchief and a cap and some beads, and with this they were well content. In the meanwhile, the Indians of the village which I have mentioned came down to the other side of the river, all laden with plantains, *yñames* and *panahes.* They waited at the spot where our people had to land from the canoe, and, approaching them, they pointed to Don Hernando, calling him the *tauriqui*; and when they came to him with the food, he embraced some of them, calling them brothers; and then they put what they had brought into the canoe, and, to pay them for it, he gave them two strings of beads; and one of them approached to give up that which our men had left in the huts the day before, in payment for what they had taken, thinking that they had lost it, but he would not take it from him. Then another Indian came to him to give him a knife which they had found, and which had been lost by a sailor, a thing which surprised Don Hernando. He showed them so much friendship that he made them understand that the hurt which had been done to them was their own fault, and that he would do them no harm unless they first gave cause. With this, they took leave of them, and they accompanied our men until they went on board. There were present all the Indians who had given them battle the day before. The name of Santa Helena was given to the river[1] for her intercession, that day being her feast. In that place they found tracks of pigs, and much food. They waited, in order that they might go out next day with two pigs. That night they travelled onward 5 or 6 leagues with a land breeze.

---

[1] Huts standing in their own grounds.

[2] Dr. Welchman thus describes the preparation of this dish. "They rasp the meat of ripe cocoanuts with a small pearl-shell; the raspings, moistened with water, are put into a strainer made of the coarse canvas-like sheathing from the trunk of a cocoa-nut palm, and the juice is wrung out into bowls, when it looks like creamy milk. The residue, looking not unlike rice, is set aside in another bowl, to be mashed with cooked yam or taro to make puddings. The milk, having been boiled in cocoa-nut shells, is poured over slabs of the pudding."

---

[1] The Bokokimbo River.

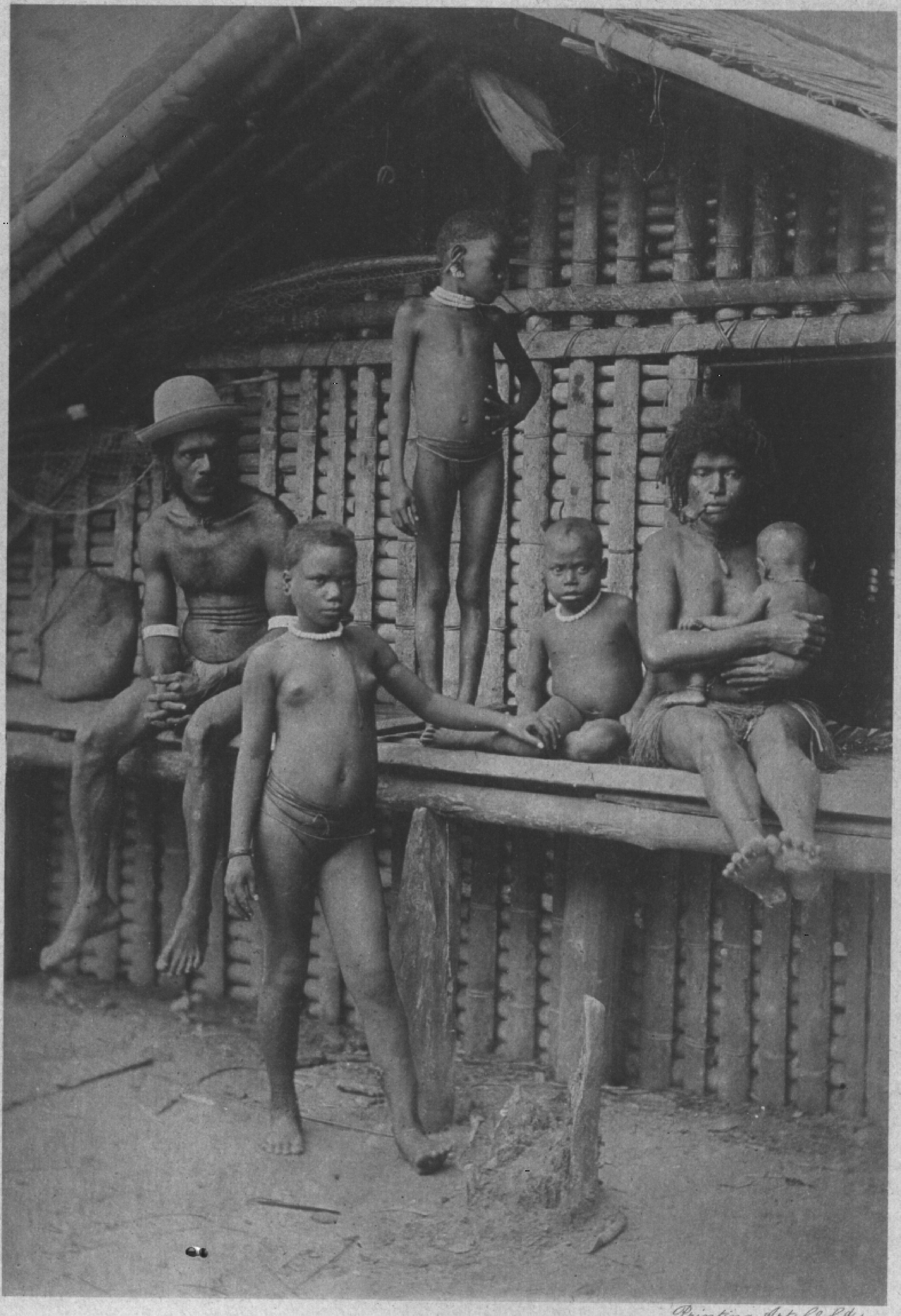
Next day, Sunday, the 23rd of the said month, at the hour of sunrise, before they could anchor, there were so many Indians on the shore at another village that there might have been more than two thousand. And when the sun had risen, they were all gathered on the look-out. And this is not to be wondered at from what was afterwards seen. For the distance of a league the shore was thickly peopled, beneath palm-groves, of which there are many along that coast, all of it being very verdant. And in this country there are a great many plains. The huts were large and very well made. Further on there was a well-populated country with some high rough ground, and the plain land came to an end, and began to rise. And while they were anchoring, a dozen canoes came off to them, and in them one hundred Indians; and it was remarked that there were but few canoes, because many of the Indians began to swim to come to our people; and they all came peaceably, without arms, whence it was supposed that they had received news of what had happened. And although there were among them some of the former Indians, they approached to speak with Don Hernando, telling him that they would give him two *nanbolos*, which are pigs, if our people would give them back the canoe which they had taken. And they all came loaded with their food, which they gave our people, and they brought them a pig. Our people gave them all the pitchers, which they presently brought back full of water. In the meantime a canoe left in all haste, crossing over to the Island of Ramos, and it went, as was believed, to carry tidings, or to ask for reinforcements. They noticed that Indian men and women were passing along the shore, carrying their burdens on their backs in the same manner as the people of Peru. There were some old men of great age, and four were exceedingly tall in stature. The natives are blacker.—On the natives bringing a pig (which is *nanbolo*), the canoe was given up to them, as they declared it to be theirs, although they belonged to a distant part. They went off well content. Don Hernando gave some beads to the others, in exchange for what they had given to our people. He showed them much friendship in that place. They saw two islands, which lay near each other, between those of [nearest to] Ramos, and Guadalcanal; and, by the side of that of Ramos another smaller one, which seemed to be of sand. They departed thence with a strong wind, leaving the Indians well satisfied, because no harm had been done to them. Shortly after, more than twenty canoes came out to them, in which were more than one hundred Indians, and they followed them a good while, thinking that our people were fleeing from them. They made two hostile attacks upon them, but did not dare to shoot arrows at them, although one canoe came in advance [of the rest]; but when the people in it began to shoot, our people fired some arquebuses at them, and with that they fled back. And after these had left them, they saw five canoes coming along the shore, in which were about twenty-five Indians. It seemed that they were crossing from the island of Ramos. They came alongside, and made such a great noise among themselves that they irritated us; and they followed us as we sailed, and made hostile demonstrations, but without shooting arrows: they howled like wolves, and yet, for all this, they were left unmolested until they approached our people, using threats to them and brandishing their clubs, feigning to kill us; at which Hernando Gallego was again very angry, asking why we did not fire at them. And as they prepared their bows to shoot, Don Hernando ordered the men to fire two arquebuses, and they at once took to flight, and our people continued on their voyage. Further on, there came out to them two canoes, in which were eight Indians, seven of them being boys, who were of no use except to row the grown-up man. He made two hostile attacks on our men, giving great shouts, and dancing in his canoe, brandishing his club, making grimaces and contortions like a devil. Our men were astonished that a single Indian should thus brave them. One of the Indians, whom our people were taking with them as interpreter, went out to meet him, and put on a mask, taking a harpoon. He began making the same grimaces and warlike feints that they use, so that it was laughable to see them both. This skirmish was only in jest, and when they were tired, seeing that it was late, the Indian went off, and they pursued their voyage.

At daybreak, there came out to them three other canoes, in which were twenty Indians, and on approaching, they at once made a hostile demonstration. Seeing that our men were few, they followed them during part of the night, and it was useless to make signs or threats to them to induce them to go. And when our men saw that they were preparing to use their bows, with which they came well provided, Hernando Gallego urged that they should hasten to fire at them; and he did so lest they should do us some damage, as it was night. Our men fired two arquebus shots at them, and it appeared that one of them was killed. The daring which they showed is a cause for wonder, for every moment they gave our people a thousand opportunities to do them harm, although our people always sought to do them as little as possible, and were troubled whenever they saw any canoes approaching.

Next day, Monday, the 24th of the said month, at daybreak, they sighted the extremity of the island ot Guadalcanal; and they discovered two islands, the one small and the other large, between which and that of Guadalcanal there is a bay, large, but dirty for ships.[1] From the large village, which I have mentioned, and out

---

[1] Marau Sound.



Printing Arts Co. Ld. sc.

A Family in Marau Sound.

Visited by the Brigantine May 24th 1568.

of which many Indians came to them, to the end of the island, it is all high mountain land, thick with bush, where there seemed to be little population, although they saw some clearings and plantations. They entered into this bay to see whether there was a harbour for the ships, and they came out through one of the channels which it has towards the sea; and, as it was necessary to get wood and water in order to proceed on the voyage of discovery, they proposed to obtain some on one of these islands, which seemed to them to be uninhabited, simply to avoid molestation from the natives, for at every step they gave trouble, as has been told. And so they went there, and before they arrived it was broad daylight. From the island of Guadalcanal there came off to them four canoes, in which there might be thirty Indians, well furnished with arrows and other arms; these approached them. Don Hernando called to them, showing them much friendliness, and he asked them for water. They told him where it was. Our men reached the island, and went ashore; and while they were taking water, they saw another large canoe approaching, and in it came thirty-six Indians, and they began to speak with the others; and it was a sight to see the arms and supplies of arrows which they brought. Our people did not understand what they said. And immediately they who had come first, disembarked, and began to gather up stones in the water, and to put them into the canoes, very near where our men were on guard over the negroes who were fetching the water, and there they tried to gather more stones. And when a sailor saw them, he threatened them with a partisan, in order that they might not gather any more, but it was of no avail. While the rest were hindering them, a canoe passed at some distance on the other side of the brigantine, where they saw them collecting many stones; and all this they were suffered to do until those in the large canoe took up arms, and were about to shoot arrows, when, to prevent them from doing any damage, Don Hernando gave his men orders to fire on them, as his patience was exhausted. The culverin was fired at a canoe with small shot, and it killed three Indians out of the four or five who were in it; and then they fired at the large canoe, and killed two others. Those of our men who were on shore attacked the canoes, and seized two of them; and when the Indians saw this, they cast themselves into the sea, taking flight, and they let them go. Then our people re-embarked in the brigantine, and pursued in all haste after the large canoe, so that some of the Indians abandoned it, and they gave chase to it. And when our men saw that they were embarking again and reassembling, they discharged some arquebus shots in the air to scare them, and in a short time they overtook them, and they all threw themselves into the sea, forsaking the large canoe. Francisco Garcia Tarifeno leaped into it with some sailors to capture some of the Indians. They overtook a boy, but they had hard work to take him, for he swam like a fish. The brigantine turned back in pursuit of another, whom they also took, and who, although he had been wounded by a bullet through the thigh, went on swimming away from them, and they would not have taken him, had not a sailor also leaped into the sea. Then they took another, an old man. When two Indians who had remained in a canoe saw this, they came with great fury straight to the brigantine, and passed close to seven or eight Indians, who were swimming; but they would not take in any before they had came up to another, who was swimming about and who seemed to be a chief. And as he was getting into the canoe, Hernando Gallego ordered them to shoot at him, and he was killed by an arquebus shot, and the rest swam away. Tarifeno took the old Indian to the brigantine, where they dressed his wound with balsam, and thereupon they went to fetch their water and wood. And in order that the Indians might understand that they did not intend to do them harm unless they began it—for certainly our people always went out of their way to avoid it, and all felt troubled whenever they saw the Indians coming, and yet when sometimes they fired in the air to scare them, they only made fun and game of it, and acted still more impudently—Don Hernando set the old Indian at liberty, and gave him a string of beads and the large canoe, that he might go in it to his home. And just at the time he was about to leave, our people saw an Indian swimming about, and thinking that he could not fail to be drowned, being so far from land, Don Hernando ordered the canoe to go for him, to rescue him. They pulled him out alive, and he desired that the wounded man might remain in the brigantine to be healed; but it seemed to the rest that it would be better to send him away, for they said that he would be more readily cured with herbs; and so they put all three into the canoe, and they went away; and he [the wounded Indian] besought Hernando Gallego earnestly, and they sent a sailor with him, who was called Miguel de Gueldo; he took from an Indian a fighting club made of a stout stick, on which they found a round nodule (*porra*) like a small cannon-ball, which he carried wrapped in palm-leaves. It was very heavy, and they opened it, and found it, as they thought, to be made of gold, with which they were pleased, although it was not gold.[1]

After this, they landed on the island, where they dined, without being disturbed any further by the natives at that time. At two o'clock in the afternoon, they departed by one of the two channels which have been mentioned, and saw the end of the said island of Guadalcanal clearly;

---

[1] See the Plate facing p. xl.

and the Chief Pilot said that they were thirty leagues distant from the ships. They saw that the said headland and end of it were broad (*cincho*[1]). There are many islets, but they are uninhabited, and there are many fisheries of Indians, and they came out between them, and the brigantine grounded every moment, and casting [the lead] several times, they found less depth each time; and, seeing this, the Chief Pilot thought it necessary to turn back, to avoid grounding on dry land, because the tide was ebbing. They did so, and waited there till daylight to find the outlet. They discovered three islands this day; one of them on the south side, the second nearly in the same course as Guadalcanal, and the third on the north side; they appeared to them to be large, and to be 12 or 13 leagues from Guadalcanal.[2]

Next day, Tuesday, the 25th of May, at daybreak, they departed thence, and found [sufficient] depth to pass between the islets. And outside them they saw many reefs, which extended in various directions, and they went right out to sea. They came out by a narrow channel, with a depth of two fathoms, and a heavy sea arose. As soon as they had come out, they set sail, tacking as the wind served them, and laying their course for the island, namely, the one which they saw on the north side, and which the Indians of Guadalcanal call Mala;[3] and they sailed all that day, and were always close-hauled (*no checo nel vyento a la bolina*).

At daybreak, next day, Wednesday, the 26th of the said month, they found themselves very near to it. And when the natives saw them, they began to come out to them with some canoes, and approached to speak to them; and in a brief space of time thirty canoes assembled, and more than two hundred Indians in them, all with their club-headed sticks, like those already mentioned. They also carried bows and arrows, and had sticks suspended by a cord from the shoulder, and hanging down the back,[1] in case they should come to blows. Among the number there came a large canoe, in which were twenty-seven Indians with such a supply of arms as to cause wonder, all being loaded with them, and those who did not carry arrows, carried four or five palm lances for hurling. And those in the large canoe kept some distance off, without attempting to come near our people. And among them was one who seemed to be the chief; the difference between him and the rest being that he wore a very large breast-plate of pearl-shell, for although others had the like, they were small; and above it he had a great necklace, which seemed to consist of fishes' teeth, and of beads.[2] And the rest of the Indians showed him respect as he came in the middle of the canoe. And they pointed to him in order that we might notice him, calling him *Mauriba*,[3] which in their language means chief. They remained there a long while. After they had anchored near them [our people], Don Hernando called to the chief in a very friendly manner, telling him that our people were his friends, and were not going to do any harm, and making the signs of peace which they use, although we did not understand them. One of them, carrying a club, approached, and came on board the brigantine. Don Hernando embraced him, and they all showed much friendliness, whereupon two other Indians came on board. Our men asked the chief for the club, in order to look at it; but he would not give it, so it was taken from him and at once inspected to see what was in it, and it was found to be of the same metal as the other one which I have mentioned; and so as not to disquiet them, it was returned to him. And when they left the brigantine, there arose a great noise among the natives, one and all speaking together with great vehemence, and they began to place themselves under arms, so as to shoot at us. The culverin was fired at the great canoe, and, apparently, the chief was killed, for they saw him fall, and he did not rise again; and, after the Indians had reached the land, they baled the water out of the canoe, and they saw blood come out with it. Our men fired several arquebus shots at the rest, and killed two, one of whom remained stretched out in the canoe, and the rest abandoned him, and fled away swimming, taking the other one away, dead. And with this they left our people, and all took to flight; for when they had seen that the brigantine was small, and our men but few, they had at once become insolent, but were worsted.

---

[1] *Cincho* is probably a mistake for *ancho*.

[2] See p. xlii. There is no large island lying south of Marau Sound. It is possible that S. Christoval was mistaken for two separate islands, and that Catoira, not being an eye-witness, confused the position assigned to the islands by his informants.

[3] See p. 25, *note*.

---

[1] One of the stone-headed clubs obtained from Rennel Island has a sort of strap of plaited fibre for suspending the weapon from the neck.

[2] Shell money.

[3] *Maeraha* is the present word for chief in Malaita.

They put into a port, which the Chief Pilot named Escondido [Hidden Port], because it has reefs outside, and at the entrance two points make it narrow, although it widens out within, and becomes an islet (*sic*), which cannot be seen from outside; here they saw a village at the edge of the water, among some palm-groves, whence came the Indians who had come out against them. They proceeded to disembark. Don Hernando took possession of all this land in the name of His Majesty, and of the General in the King's name; and for that purpose, he used all needful observances, and the natives did [not] hinder him. They remained there all the morning till the afternoon, because the natives had forsaken the village and betaken themselves to the hills. They prepared some food there, and dined well, for God provided them with a large pig, which was killed with an arquebus shot without hindrance from the natives, and they feasted on it. Besides this, they found a great quantity of roots, *panaes* and *yñames*, and they placed part of them in the brigantine for their further voyage. They found many tracks of pigs, but although they looked for the animals, they did not find any. In a large hut, they found three canoes, larger than any that had been seen till then. They were measured, and one was twenty-four paces in length, and seven feet in width, and the second was sixteen feet in width (*sic*), and the third was smaller. Store-rooms were made in them, from which it was inferred that they were used for trading with other islands, the wares for barter being stored therein. The Indians of this island go without loin cloths. . . . . .[1] They carry many arms, which are lances, arrows and clubs, and they are better provided with arms and canoes than those of the other islands. The country is full of hills, which are not very high. There are mangrove thickets in it, and it seemed to be well peopled, for in a short space of time many Indians came to meet them. Their dwellings are at the water's edge, and we did not see any houses on the heights, nor on the cliffs; the whole being very hilly. Hernando Gallego gave it the name of the Island of San German,[2] because we reached it on the feast day of that Saint. Don Hernando left in it objects of barter, which he deemed equivalent to what was taken from it, which had been but little; for in everything it was sought to do the least possible damage; if any were done, it was from pure necessity. And in the afternoon they embarked, and had a favourable wind for going to discover the things which they desired. They left that port, and began to proceed up the coast. They voyaged till midnight, for at that hour the wind failed them, and they made for a port, which seemed to them to be the mouth of a river, and apparently a large one, as the water flowed forth from it with great force. Here they stopped and anchored.[1]

---

[1] The sentence continues: "con las verguenças de fuera. Algunos traen en la punto del suyo una hoja de palma revuelto, con que mal se cubre."

[2] A mistake: the name S. German had been given to the eastern part of the Florida Group, and Malaita had been named Ramos.

Next day, Thursday, the 27th of the said month, they found that it was not a river, and Hernando Gallego judged it necessary to find out what it was, but he could not succeed, for the mouth of the bay was very rough. They anchored on the north side, and because the tide was ebbing, they departed thence; and after having gone a league, many canoes with Indians came out to them, for although the country was full of hills, the houses were not visible, nor the huts,[2] nor the clearings, yet it was full of people, which surprised them. The natives approached them, and some of them came on board the brigantine, whereupon Hernando showed them much friendliness. He asked one to give him one of his club-sticks, and the Indian did so: he gave him a cap for it, and the Indian was well satisfied, and they asked our men to go with them. They asked them for *Mauriba*, their chief, and as they could proceed no further, because of the foul weather, they entered the harbour whence the natives had come out. They anchored, and immediately they saw several Indians come down to the shore to see them, bearing arms, and the women carried arms; and they all stood watching. And a good while after they had anchored, an Indian shot an arrow at them. They remained quiet to see whether the Indians would become turbulent, and they saw them bend the arrows to their bows to shoot again, and to fight in earnest. And after many had assembled, our people perceived that they intended to give battle, because they began to be insolent. And, at this juncture they saw an Indian, who seemed to be from the village where they had been the day before, go to those who were on the beach, and apparently give them news of the late event, for the Indians immediately fled through the bush, and the women and others began to call in all haste to the Indians who were with our people, and then all took to flight. In that district there is a very good harbour. Hernando Gallego gave it the name of the Puerto de la Ascension,[1] because they were there on that day. And, when some of the Indians saw that we did them no harm when they did not begin it, a dozen of them came back. And when our people saw that they carried many of the aforesaid clubs behind them, thinking them to be of gold (for some of our people declared this to be the case), the sailors and all made great haste to barter for them. Don Hernando had given orders that they should not do so, in order that the natives might not think they held them in account; but they did it in such a manner that they were not seen. And when it came to the notice of Don Hernando that they had obtained three or four in exchange for caps, he decided to make experiment of what they were made of, and, striking one upon another, they both broke, and then they found out that they were not of gold, and no one knew what it was, though some said that it was ironstone; and had this not been done, such was their cupidity that they would have taken more than fifty in exchange, and they would have been left entirely without caps. In these barterings there was some cheating, for an Indian gave a stick to a sailor for a cap, and they at once found that it was of a stone that did not contain any kind of metal; and they took the object of barter from him. And those who had caps valued them as being worth gold sticks, owing to the circumstance aforesaid.[1]

---

[1] Maramasiki Passage.

[2] For *charas* read *chacaras*, or *chacras*.

---

[1] Probably Ariel Harbour.

They departed thence, and rowed on till midnight, and at that hour they anchored in a harbour, there being many excellent harbours on that coast.

On the next day, Friday, the 28th of May, they came at daybreak upon another harbour, into which they entered, and they anchored where the Indians were able to shoot at them from both sides with arrows, and even with stones and lances. At this time, there were many Indians who had come forth to see them, and had called to them to induce them to enter. They came loaded with arms, and surrounded them on all sides. They stayed there till it was afternoon, and all the while they talked, some making fun of them, and others talking sensibly. And as they saw our people were peaceable, and did them no harm, imagining that our people were afraid of them, they began to grow insolent, and to make light of them in earnest, with much laughter and jokes, and they gathered stones; and yet for all this, our people remained quiet, and the Indians began to cast stones and arrows. Don Hernando gave the order to fire at them. They killed one of them immediately, another was badly wounded; and thereupon they went away, although they lingered a little while, protecting themselves behind the trees. Our people departed thence at once, and not far on they saw the headland of the island along the coast, and they proceeded along it, on Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday. The headland is large, and trends towards the north. In that island the Indians wear caps, made of the white and fair hair of Indians, and they have some of their own made in this manner, and some have them blue in the middle and white at the sides, for they bleach them.[1] They carry lances, with a flint at the point, made like the iron head of a cavalry lance, and each of those who carry lances, carries also four or five darts, and others with flint [heads], when they come to blows.[2] They did not see that there was any river of water in all that country, and that which they got was from a pool.[3] It appeared to be a poor land, and it was understood that the Indians went to other islands to barter for provisions.

---

[1] See p. xl, *note*.

Immediately on arriving at the headland of that island, they saw another, on the same course, for which they started with a north wind. They arrived off it, there being 7 or 8 leagues from one to the other. They anchored near the land, and when the natives saw them, they began to make a great noise, and to say "*mauriba*" many times, with great rejoicings and boisterous mirth at seeing something so new to them. Presently a canoe came to them, and in it were two Indians, who approached very near in order to reconnoitre. They went a good distance without speaking to our people, and at length they spoke, and our men did not answer them, but made a noise at them to alarm them and make them go away, but it was of no use; so, in order to startle them, they fired two arquebuses in the air, and yet they did not go, nor did they pay any attention to it, until they fired at them again, when the ball passed near the canoe, a thing which astonished the bestial minds which they possess. And when they reached the land, and had told the news of what had occurred to the rest, they rejoiced greatly, and they and their wives began at once to sing, very harmoniously and with good tone. And when those of one [set of] huts ceased, those of other [huts] took it up, so that they gave them music all night long. And a good while[1] after, two canoes with people in them came out to them, and they went round and gazed at the brigantine for a long time; and after they had done so without being fired at, or spoken to, they departed; and so our people remained all night, keeping good watch, for there were many people.

---

[1] These were wigs made of vegetable fibre, which are now worn principally by men growing bald, in Ysabel Island as well as in Malaita, to which island their use seems to have been confined at the period of the discovery. The natives use a blue vegetable dye. The translation has been revised since the quotation on p. xli was written.

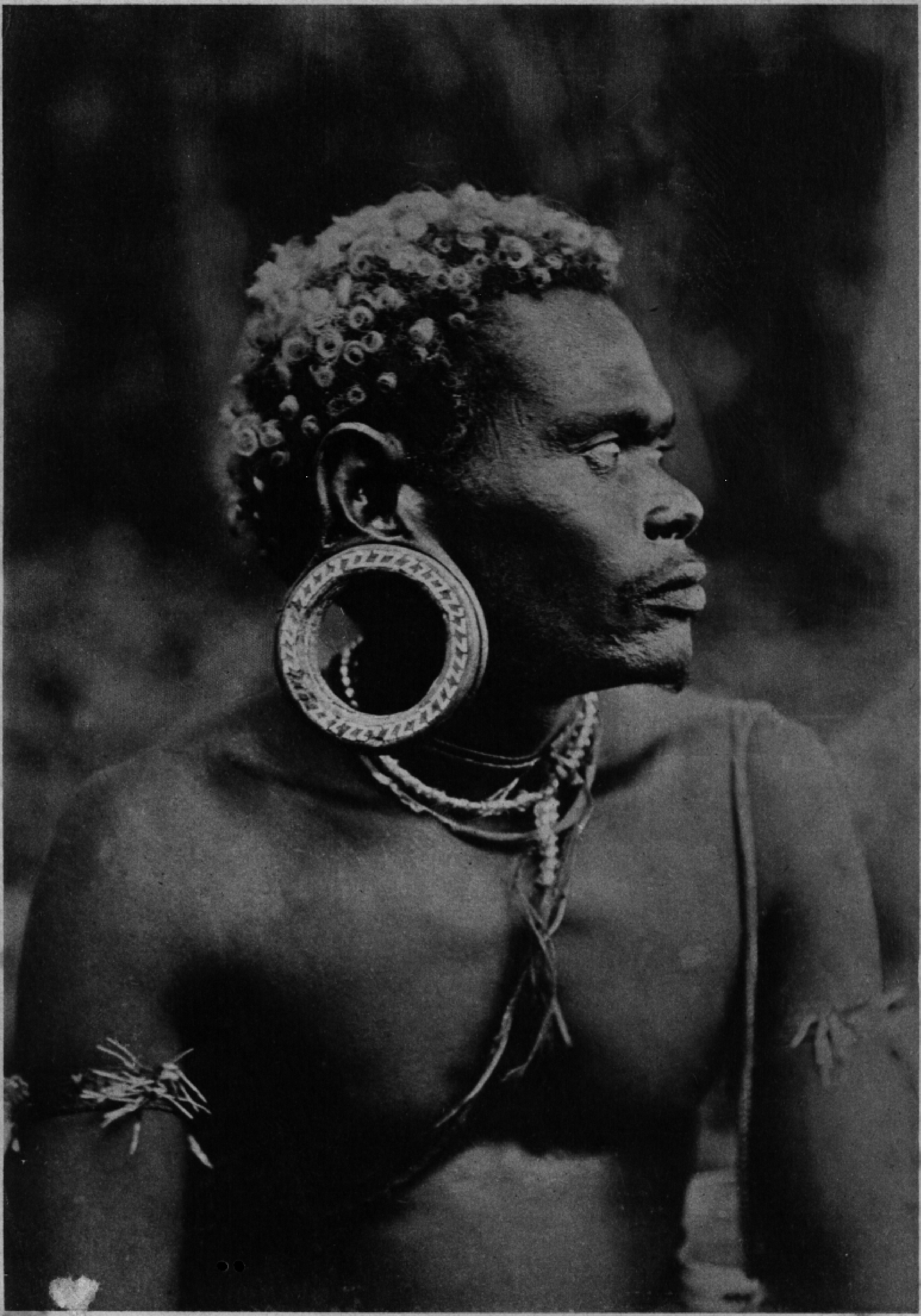
[2] Flint is common in the district, but it is not now used to tip lances or darts (see p. lxxviii, *note*).

Next day, Saturday, the 29th of the said month, at daybreak, there came out to them seven or eight canoes of Indians, in which was the chief of that place; and he was distinguished from the rest by wearing many strings of the kind of beads which they possess, and some bracelets of bone, white and large; in their ears they wore some large stars of shells,[2] and others of fishes' teeth, and a girdle of shells and beads. This chief came better dressed than any other chief that they had seen during these discoveries; all were without arms. He and the others came on board the brigantine. Don Hernando embraced them, and gave them beads and food, and showed them friendliness, and they did the same. By this time the shore was full of natives who had come out to see them, and there were boys and old men, and girls and women, and although they saw our people land near them, they did not move until they came up to help them to run the brigantine ashore, hauling her with a rope. They stayed among them for some time quite securely, because they were all without arms.

---

[1] *Ayra*, probably *alli a*.

[2] For the extraordinary distention of the ear, see the Plate.



Printing Arts Cº Lᵈ sc.

Native of New Georgia with inlaid earring.

Like the people of the Island of San German, these Indians usually clothe themselves with palm-leaves, which do not cover them properly; and they were all better featured than any who had been seen till then, and seemed a very healthy people, for they were all plump and shiny. Some of the women wear very short skirts, made of palm and *dama agua*,[1] like a fringe, and others go naked. They are well featured, and some pride themselves on being smart with the finery which they possess. One was seen with white roses in her ears, which appeared to be made of bone; and many others with glass beads,[2] who looked like nymphs; and others who wore their hair well arranged and of two or three colours, the sides in some cases being blue, and the middle of the head white, and fair, and red, and green, and others all white and fair, for they bleach it so; and some of the Indian men wear it in this manner. It was very pleasing to our people to see such a fine race, both because they received them in peace, and because they were of such a good appearance. Don Hernando took possession in the name of His Majesty.

While this was going on they were caught in a shower, whereupon they went up to a hut which was above a ravine in sight of the brigantine, where they waited for it to pass over. The native Indians, both men and women, held converse with them. Don Hernando asked their *tauriqui* for a pig. He said that he would bring one, and quitted them, and he was not long in returning with a girdle in his hands, which he showed them, and gave them to understand that the pig was of that size. Our people understood that he did so in order to see what exchange they would give him for it. Don Hernando made him understand that he was to bring it, and that he would be paid for it; and he did so. And when he came with it, our people had embarked, because it had come on to rain again; and he came near, but would not give it till they showed him what they intended to give him. A cap was shown to him, but it did not please him, and then glass beads, but he would not have them, nor give the pig. Seeing this, he [Don Hernando] ordered two negroes to jump overboard and go to him and take the pig from him. And when the natives saw them jump overboard, they understood, and took it away very quickly. And as they had received them in peace, Don Hernando ordered that no harm should be done to them; and so our men began to put out to sea and to go forward to pursue their voyage. And when the natives saw this, they thought that it was done out of fear. Either for this reason, or thinking to distinguish themselves before the ladies (*damas*) who were there, they all began to put themselves in battle-array, seizing arms and stones, and some launched the canoes in great haste, and loaded them with stones. And in spite of this our people went on getting out to sea so as not to kill any of them. They began to follow them and to shoot arrows, especially one of four Indians who had put themselves forward in a canoe, and no time was lost in giving him the reward of his rashness, for, with the first arquebus-shot which was fired at him, he fell dead out of the canoe, and those who came with him betook themselves to swimming in order to escape. They turned the prow against the rest who were coming to attack them, and, facing them, they made them all flee. Seeing this, it seemed good to Don Hernando and Hernando Gallego to take there water and food, of which they had need, in order to proceed further; they had not wished to take any in that harbour, because the Indians had received them in peace, and so as not to offend them, they had left it to take some in another harbour.

---

[1] *Dama agua* may be intended for *Damara*, the Dammar tree, which has broad, lanceolate leaves.

[2] Perhaps shell money.

So then they went ashore, and mounted to the top of some high ravines, where there was a plain with many houses; and they saw that all the Indians were fleeing to the mountain. And looking to see what there was in the huts, they found much food, and took of it what they needed for their support. And they found in one hut a basket full of fresh pig's flesh. And in that harbour there were many sheds in which they sheltered the pigs, and many signs of them, although they found none.

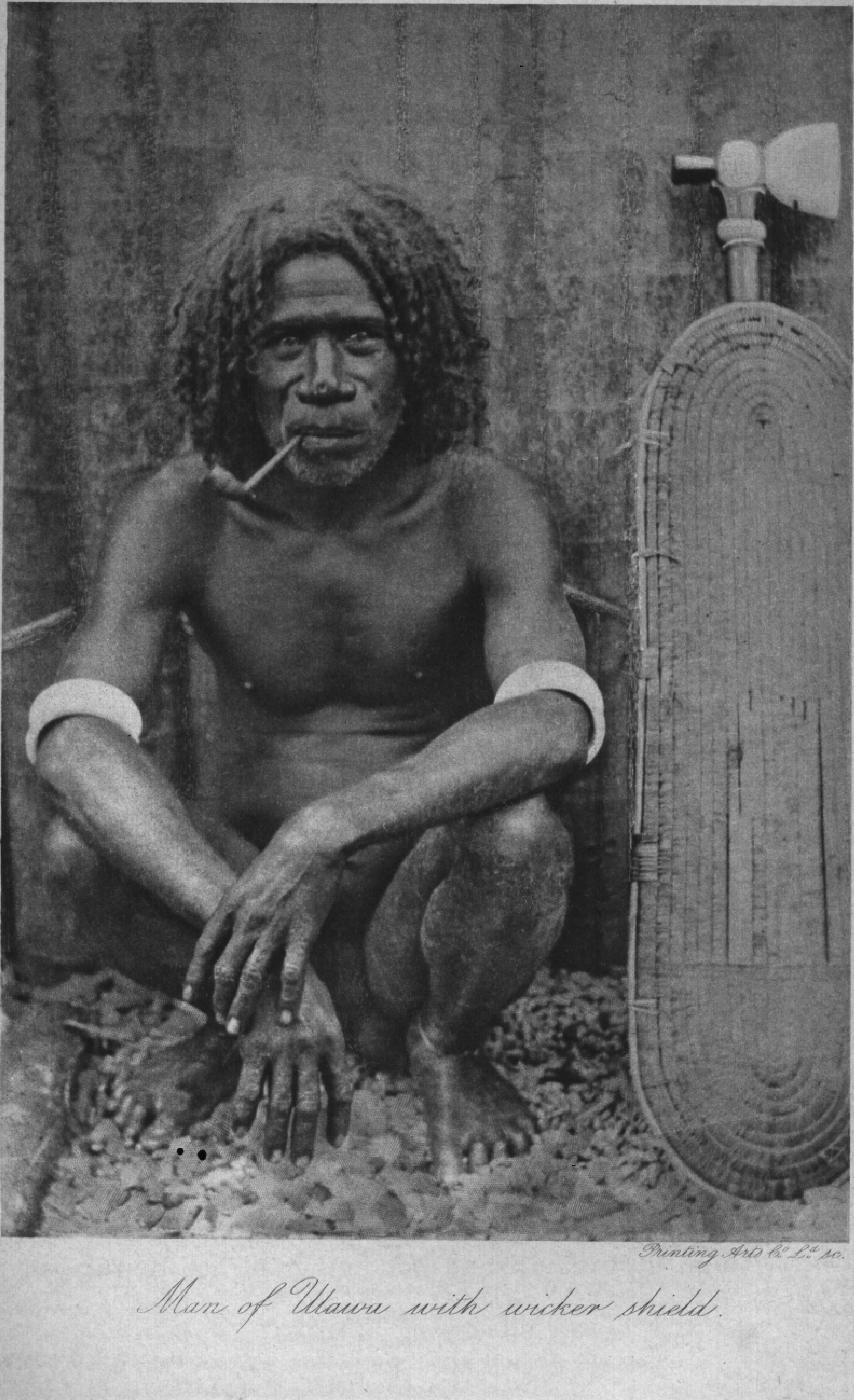
In the bush they caught a large pig, which was killed, and which they ate this day, Sunday [Saturday]. They caught another small one, which was killed. They saw a very large and broad temple, wherein were painted many figures of devils with horns like those of goats; it had a large, wide porch, with a breastwork of boards, which seemed to be a counter. In it they found many cocoanuts and other things, which the natives apparently had offered to the Devil. It contained many secret places and apartments. In front of it was a rostrum or pulpit, which seemed to be boarded; it was large and very high, with steps to mount up to it.[1] After they had gone all over it, and looked at it well, without the natives hindering them, or anyone appearing, they returned to the brigantine, having got water from a small river which was there. It was determined to prepare for dinner, and they dined between the banks of this river.

And while the negroes were washing clothes and preparing dinner, some time having passed since all this happened, the Indians came back to rally themselves, and the sentinels whom our people had posted saw them coming with great fury to attack them; and our people prepared to receive them, and had they not done so, the Indians might have done them damage whilst embarking, because they came on with great determination. Most of them were provided with shields made of board, which covered them from head to foot, and even extended a good palm's length above each one; and they also carried four or five lances for throwing, and others for use at close quarters. Our people went up to those who were at the top of the ravines, and the Indians began to shoot at them, and our people at the Indians; and they, thinking that the shields were a defence against the arquebuses, disputed foot to foot with our men. They came very near, and two balls were fired at two of them, who fell at once, and immediately our men closed with them with great spirit, and straightway the rest fled.

---

[1] These temples were *oha*, canoe-houses, or public halls, and the paintings and carvings of sea-ghosts, which are very remarkable in this district, might easily be mistaken for devils with horns. Though offerings are made to the spirits represented by the carvings, the figures are not idols, nor are the buildings temples in the English sense of the word. The pulpits, called *bea*, are very characteristic of S. Christoval and the islands in its neighbourhood.

One of those who fell was an old man, who carried a lance in his hand and a shield; when he saw us attack he rose, although he was wounded in one leg by a ball, and with much spirit, without making any attempt to escape, he covered himself with his shield, and faced them all, making many thrusts at the shield-bearers with his lance. He gave a lance-thrust at one shield, which might well have pierced through it from side to side, and he occupied himself with them in this manner, protecting himself with his shield until they destroyed it with gashes; and even after they had given him one stab and two gashes, he fought with his lance until they settled him with a cut, and threw him to the ground, and there fell from him all that remained of his lance. Then Don Hernando ordered them to do him no more harm; and, although he was so much hurt, yet he endeavoured to rise up against our men, and sought for the piece of the lance which had remained to him, but as he could not find it, he fell down again. It



Printing Arts Co. Ld. sc.

Man of Ulawa with wicker shield.

was understood that this old man was the husband of an old woman, whom a soldier mistook for an Indian waiting in the bush[1] to shoot at them, and shot her dead before this occurred. It grieved them much, as she was a woman and the old man had done what he did in desperation; for they admired the spirit which he showed, and still more so when, some time after he had fallen, a soldier named Matia Pinelo, who was the one who had given him the stab, was approaching to look at him; he tried to lift himself up against him, and as he could not do so, he plucked a handful of grass, and threw it at him.

While this was going on, more than thirty canoes with many Indians in them were coming by sea, so that it looked like a fleet. They were coming in and making straight for the brigantine, and our men gathered that it had been arranged between them that some should attack them by sea, and others by land; and it would not have been a bad stratagem, for they would have engaged our people on three sides had they all managed to arrive at the same time, since another squadron of Indians had come down the river; and while fighting with those who came down, one soldier and two negroes dispersed them, for they had remained as sentinels at the mouth of the river, to see whether any Indians would come in that direction. They embarked immediately, and put out to sea; and when the Indians in the fleet of canoes, who were already coming in, saw them, they went under the stern of the brigantine, without attacking or venturing near.

Our men went coasting along the headland of that island, which is narrow, and when they saw that the land turned, they began to cross over to other islands, which were visible from thence. They had seen one of them from the island of Guadalcanal, and they omitted to coast along it, in order to save time, because [it] seemed to be large, and also because Hernando Gallego was indisposed with a tertian fever, and further because the ships would have to come that way to learn particularly what was in the land.

---

[1] *Arcaluco* is doubtless intended for *arcabuco*.

Hernando Gallego gave that island the name of Treguada,[1] because the natives had received them peaceably, and afterwards had rebelled. It contains many people, although there seems to be but little land; and although it is mountainous, it has many clearings, and they were surprised to see so many people as came to look at them all night. They were in a calm, and proceeded some leagues with the oars.

Next day, Sunday, the 30th of the said month of May, at daybreak, they saw two small islands, which are between La Treguada and the large island, to which they were crossing. It seemed good to Hernando Gallego to approach them, in order to see whether they were inhabited, and so they went, but could not see whether this was so. And they passed further on, where they found another larger uninhabited island, and they found no water in any of them, although they looked for it.[2]

Next day, Monday, the last day of May, they departed from thence, and having no wind, they began to row for about 3 leagues, in order to make the large island;[3] and when they were midway, many canoes came out to them from a settlement on it, and as the sailors were very tired with rowing, on their approach, they gave three ropes to three of them in order that they might aid them to go forward, because the wind was contrary; and they did so, and they all took them in tow with much rejoicing, thinking that they had been given up to them as their captives and prisoners. And as they towed them fastened thus, it was no mean help, for in two hours they went the distance that would have taken them four hours. Then a great number of canoes began to come out of other settlements, and they counted eighty which came near them, besides others which kept at some distance, and there were about four hundred Indians in all.

---

[1] This refers, not to the island mentioned in the last paragraph, which seems to be intended for the northern coast of S. Christoval, but to Ulawa, where the fighting took place.

[2] Gallego, who was an eye-witness, says that the Tres Marias were inhabited, and that water was obtained in them. If this was so, the water must have been of very doubtful quality.

[3] The northern coast of S. Christoval.

When the Indians from the other settlements approached, and saw that the aforesaid were towing, there was so much envy and cupidity among them that they began to tell our people not to go with the others, as they would kill and eat them, but rather to go with them to their settlements, for they would give them to eat and drink, and embrace them; and this they solicited with much insistence, and asked it earnestly, but so that the Indians who drew them could not hear it, and they thought that our people did not understand their knavery. Then, turning to those who were towing, such was the rejoicing and noisy mirth among them that they did not know how to show their contentment, some singing, and others making playthings of their paddles. They sang in two ways, one being like that of the Indians of Peru.

And in this manner they brought them near the land, all the eighty canoes and more accompanying them, for they kept on joining them at the anchorage; they saw at the water's edge a large village among some palms, which made it look very pleasant: it had its squares. As far as our people could see, all the shore was full of houses, and there were so many [houses] and so many people in that land, that they were astonished.

When they had anchored, the women and children immediately came out on the sea-shore in great numbers to see them. Those who were in the canoes were very sad, because they had not been able [to bring them] to land. Presently they began to put [themselves] all in array, drawing forth the weapons which they had kept hidden in the canoes. They began to speak one with another, and others again with others, and some went to fetch weapons. When Don Hernando saw this, in order to alarm them, he, with the approval of all, ordered the culverin and the arquebuses to be discharged in the air, and immediately they all began to betake themselves to flight. All the men threw themselves overboard from three canoes, swimming and leaving them deserted, and in a short time not one of them was visible, or gave them any trouble. All this time there was an Indian in the brigantine, a long time having passed since he had come on board; and when he saw what was going on, he tried to throw himself overboard, but they laid hold of him and compelled him to remain against his will; he was bound, and placed below deck.

Then Don Hernando determined to go ashore, to take possession and find water; but on the brigantine coming near the land, they found so much surf that they gave up landing, so as not to injure the brigantine. And as it was night, they set sail for the open sea, and began to make for another island, two leagues from this, to get water, as it seemed to be inhabited,[1] with the intention of returning in the morning to take possession of the other.

To return to the Indian whom they had captured: it happened that while a soldier was opening the hatchway to put in his clothes and arquebus, he had broken the lead line and become untied; he held in his hand a club which he had found there, and with which he aimed a blow at the soldier, which all but struck him between the eyes, and then he attacked him in order to escape from the hatchway; and when the soldier prevented him, he let go the club and caught hold of a sword, which seemed to him to be a better weapon, for he had seen it before and tried its edges, and unsheathing it, he began to make many thrusts at those who were watching and guarding him, so that he should not escape; and he continued in this manner without their being able to get at him; and so as not to kill him, orders were taken as to how the sword should be got out of his hands, for he had dropped one and seized another, as he was going about selecting weapons. In this confusion he was struck on the face with the butt-end of an arquebus, so that it broke. After the sword was taken from him, it took four men to bind him, and they could not quiet him, for he used great force and would not be bound; and when he was brought on deck, a rope having been placed round his neck while they were binding him, he strove hard to throw himself into the sea, till, becoming exhausted, he gave himself up; and they bound him fast, although those who bound him were also much exhausted. They healed him with balsam. The further they went up, the more warlike and daring they found the Indians. Don Hernando told him to call some one to come for him, and he would let him go, if he would give him some pigs, which they call *apos*;[1] and he, being enraged, would not do so, but asked them to go ashore and take him with them, when he would give them some there.

---

[1] Ugi Island.

Hernando Gallego gave the island the name of Santiago, and he took the sun in it on the north side in 11 degrees; and it seemed to be a large land, and well populated and hilly. They saw there many clearings and *chacaras* and houses on the heights, and the largest village appeared to be near the water. The people are well grown and robust, and are all very fat, for they did not see a thin

---

[1] *A* (article) *bo* (pig).

Indian among more than four hundred who came out to them. They go without loin-cloths, and they wear their hair like those of San German and La Treguada.[1] They pride themselves on having their canoes well painted and better than [those of] others. This day another tertian fever attacked Hernando Gallego; and because some of the sailors and soldiers were sick of fevers, which weakened them, for this reason it was determined to return, and also because only two days were wanting to complete the term of fifteen days which had been assigned to them, for in those [two days] little could be discovered, and it would be possible to discover more with the ships. They did not see the headland of this island. From it another island was seen close by, in the same course and direction.[2] Hernando Gallego said that they had seen many islands as they were approaching the said island, it being midnight.

When the Indian, who was above deck, heard the sea breaking, he tried to unfasten himself, and thereupon they put him below, and while they were doing this he roared like the Devil. They anchored there close in shore, and the natives lit a number of bonfires.

Next day, Tuesday, the 1st of June, they landed on this island.[3] More than one hundred and fifty Indians came to see them on the shore, all with their weapons, and some of the women carried lances. They saw one woman, who was much bedizened, and who seemed to be chieftainess over them all; she carried a bow and arrows. They saw among them seven or eight little dogs, and a woman was carrying a small pig in her arms, as if she were fond of it. They received them peacefully. Don Hernando took possession, and gave the island the name of San Juan: it might be about 12 leagues in circumference. They took water there, without being hindered by the Indians, who indeed carried it and put it into the brigantine, and gave them cocoanuts and two or three fish. Don Hernando gave them beads, and they embarked and put off without doing any harm, and awaited weather to cross over to the Island of Santiago.

---

[1] The writer means Malaita and Ulawa, though Malaita had been named Ramos.

[2] This was probably another part of S. Christoval (see pp. xlii and 50).

[3] Ugi Island.

The Indians came off in their canoes, all peaceably, to hold conversation with them, and brought cocoanuts. And when it was getting late, five canoes came from the Island of Santiago in search of the Indian whom our men were carrying off. They drew near, asking them by signs to shew him to them, but our men continued some time without choosing to show him, though the Indians importuned Don Hernando much to do so; and in order that they might understand that our men had not eaten him, as they themselves do, he commanded him to be brought forth; and when they saw him they rejoiced greatly, and he with them. They made inquiry whether they could ransom him; and the answer was: "Yes, for four pigs," and they said that they would give them. Then they landed on the island, and asked the natives of it to bring some of the pigs on account; and after much persuasion they brought a small one, with which they came on board the brigantine, but our men refused to accept it until they brought the rest of the pigs. And when the Indians saw this reluctance, they showed them some strings of beads, asking by signs whether they would take them; and when they said "No," they immediately sent a canoe in haste towards another settlement further on, to seek the rest of the pigs. An hour was occupied in going and coming. Our men urged those who had given them the one to give them the others; they gave them another. Meanwhile the Indian begged his friends very earnestly to fetch them and release him, and they did so with all speed, and kept the two tied up on the shore; and they came to tell Don Hernando that they could not find any more, but that, if he would give the prisoner up for three, they would go and seek for another. Seeing that they were murmuring, he answered "Yes," and that they should bring them. They returned to land, and procured another, and although they delayed, they brought it; and because the brigantine had to arrive at the Island of Santiago at daybreak on the morrow, in order to lose no time, she awaited them. They brought all three pigs in a canoe, and were so much afraid that they did not dare approach to give them; and they had even lost confidence that our men would give them back the Indian after the pigs had been given, and so they were very cautious. They made signs that our people should unloose him, and give him to them, and that then they would give them [the pigs]. Our people had the same mistrust that they would carry him off without first delivering the pigs. Matters continued thus for more than half an hour, till Don Hernando became irritated, and ordered them to put the Indian below deck. And when they saw this they approached nearer, and asked them to remove a rope which he had round his neck, and then they would give the pigs. And because it was understood that, being so warlike, he would use some of his great strength and throw himself into the sea, and that the Indians were entertaining them with words to enable him to do so, it was not removed. Meanwhile the captive Indian asked them to come and give the pigs, and all our people told them to have no fear, yet they did not dare to do so. And because it was seen that reason would not prevail with them, a negro was ordered to stretch out his arm, and seize the prow of the canoe in which were three Indians with the pigs, and he did so; and when he had seized it, the Indians struggled to get themselves free, but it was of no avail. Then two of our people jumped into the water, hauling strongly on the canoe, and when they had grappled it well, Don Hernando ordered a negro to get into it to take the pigs. He got in, and took the two, and put them in the brigantine.[1] Meanwhile the Indian who had remained in the stern of the brigantine took the other pig, and dragged it along; and the negro approached and took it from him, without his making any resistance. After having done this, Don Hernando took the Indian by the hand, and took off the rope which he had on; and after it was taken off, he put on him a cap and four or five strings of beads, all those who came for him standing by, looking at him; and the Indian embraced him [Don Hernando], understanding the kindness which they had shown him; and he approached him and embraced him very closely, weeping for pleasure; and then Don Hernando made signs to him that he could go, and when he was set at liberty, he did so, and got into the canoe very leisurely; and he and the others understood that our people had released him of their own free will. Then they took him ashore, and as he went he made signs like one who renders thanks for the good which had been done to him. Those who were on the shore rejoiced at his liberty. Our people understood that one of those who came in the canoe was his father, and another his brother, and that he was a chief; and many canoes did nothing but pass from some of the islands to others in search of him Then, when four Indians who were in a canoe saw him set at liberty, they set off in all haste for the Island of Santiago, and it was understood that they went to tell the news that he had been set free. At this time night came on, and the Indian stayed with the natives in that island of San Juan. Then they called to our people to depart from thence, saying "*Cao, cao.*"[1] They had no battle this day, and they regarded it as very lucky, for they were constantly having them, as has been related. And so they remained till night-fall, and the Indians posted their sentinels.

---

[1] This passage, as well as many others, indicates that domesticated pigs were by no means common, for both here and at St. George's Island the natives were evidently doing their best to find the ransom demanded. Probably the pigs were half wild, and impossible to catch at short notice.

Next day, Wednesday, the 2nd of the said month of June, at daybreak, they arrived at the island of Santiago, 2 or 3 leagues below the place where they had captured the Indian, and it was hardly light when more than sixty canoes joined them; for, in order not to do them harm, the order had been given to arrive at that island at break of day, to take possession before many could assemble, so that they might not become insolent. They all came well provided with arms, and they came on foot in order of battle, with many arrows and weapons; and the weapons were so numerous that they were covered with them; some urged our people to go to their settlement, others to theirs, all being very jubilant, thinking that they had got a good prize; and there even seemed to be contention between them about the partition, for they were talking with one another, and making a great noise. Our men[2] drew near to anchor; and when the Indians saw that they did not come ashore, they arranged among themselves to give them battle; and because it was necessary for our people to go ashore, and in order that the brigantine might not remain so surrounded by canoes, seeing that the natives were already becoming insolent and that some had begun to shoot arrows, although our people had signified their friendship to them, and said that they were not going to harm them, he [Don Hernando] ordered the culverin to be fired at the two large canoes, and the arquebusiers to fire at the rest; and, this having been done, they all took to flight immediately, although they first shot at our men some arrows, which stuck in the brigantine; and through the fear which overcame them the Indians left eight canoes deserted, and went off swimming to land, and our people immediately went ashore. And Don Hernando took possession of the whole island in the name of His Majesty, and they took water from a river which was there, without the natives preventing it. They saw a village among some palm-groves, which seemed to be large and fair.

---

[1] In Ulawa and the neighbouring islands, the word for "Away!" is "*Wao!*"

[2] Throughout his narrative, Catoira uses the pronoun "they" without distinguishing between the Spaniards and the natives. Wherever his meaning is obvious we have substituted the words "our men," "the natives," etc., for the sake of clearness,

They turned back to embark, without receiving any harm, nor did they do any to the property of the natives. And after they had put to sea, an Indian came alone and began shooting at them; an arquebus was fired at him and he fled. And they set sail, and came away from the island without seeking to know any more of what there was in it, because Hernando Gallego had another tertian fever, and some of the others were sick, and had they gone ashore again [it would have been] to the hurt of the natives, as occasion might have arisen for them to kill some of them.

They finished running along the coast with the wind astern, and saw the headland of the island. It seemed to them to be large and long, and the high land long, with many clearings [*rocas*, ? *roças*], and the land full of ravines and some low land. There are many people in it, and throughout it there is not one hand-breadth which is not inhabited.

The next day, Thursday, the 3rd of the same, daybreak found them between the Island of Guadalcanal and that of Ramos, and Don Hernando sought to coast along Ramos, but it could not be done, because many were sick on board; and it was agreed, with the consent of, all that they should coast along the Island of Guadalcanal, in order to follow the coast and land in some village to procure food, and to rejoin the ships with more speed, as, were it necessary, they could go to the Island of Ramos after rejoining them; and so it was carried into effect. At nine o'clock in the morning they reached the headland of it [Guadalcanal], where they made for a large bay, which has been mentioned;[1] and because there was much wind and sea, which continued all night, they could not sleep; and the water came in through the deck planking of the brigantine, and soaked them through, and she rolled heavily. They did not stop there, and having a fair wind, they proceeded on their voyage with the aforesaid determination, and coasted along the land. When it was afternoon, they saw a village among some palm-groves near the shore, where there was a harbour, and they were compelled to put in to barter for some food.

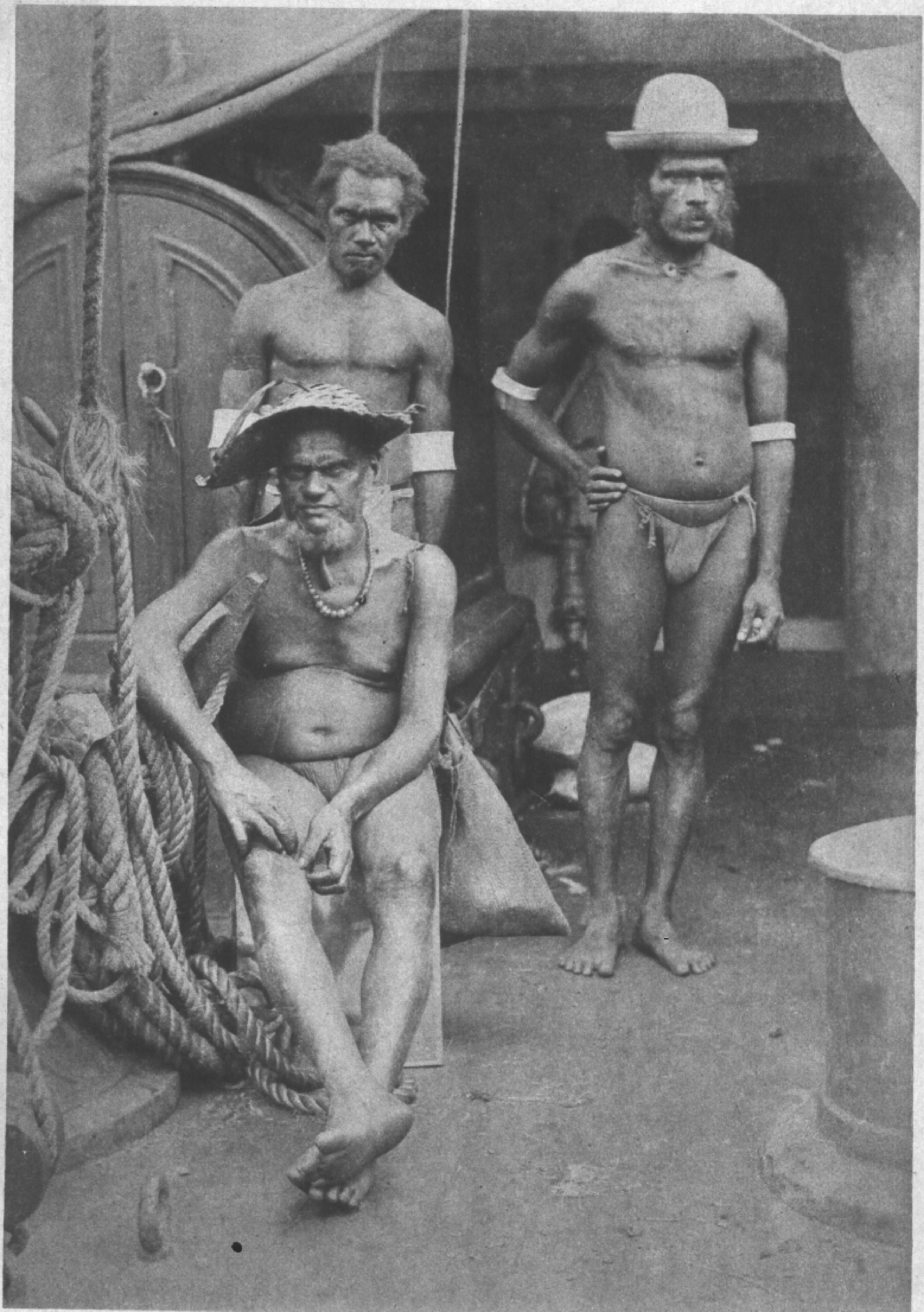
They went ashore, but not an Indian appeared, for they had been so warned by experience that they had all fled, and although our people had not done any damage there, the natives had already had news of them. They looked into all the huts, and found that they contained but little food, and they took some of it, so as not to despoil the natives of the whole, and they left the exchange at the doors of the houses. They found an Indian skull placed in a basket, which was being roasted at the fire.[2]

And thereupon they proceeded along the shore, and came to a large river, which was near, for there are many

---

[1] Marau Sound.

[2] This was, no doubt, a *mangite*, or sacred relic of a dead relation, exhumed from the grave to be suspended in the house. The *mangite* is the instrument by which the help of the *lio'a*, or ghost, can be invoked.—See *The Melanesians*, by Dr. Codrington, pp. 254 and 262.



Printing Arts Cº Lᵈ sc.

Chiefs of Marau Sound.

in all that country. They saw four or five Indians on the opposite side of the river. They asked them not to cross, for they would bring them a pig ; and understanding that they did this to beguile them in order to remove the food, they crossed at once in two canoes which they found there, and the Indians took to flight. But they did not find any village ; and they turned back to embark, because night was coming on, and there were signs of bad weather.

They remained there that night, because it was a sheltered harbour. And when the natives saw that they did not go away, they came with a pig, and put it on the shore, for they did not dare to wait ; and our people went for it, and left them the exchange on a pole, and the Indians came for it. And that night they had many showers, with thunder and lightning.

Next day, Monday, the 4th of the same, at daybreak, they departed thence with the wind astern. At a short distance they saw a large village on the shore, and they put in there to barter for food, and there they landed.

And when the natives saw them, many of them came without arms, laden with food, but the load was not so great that the weight could weary them, for each one brought only one root in his hand, and others two. They made a heap of it, and after they had amassed it, Don Hernando ordered them to take it to the brigantine, and they did so. Don Hernando asked them to give them more food, and it would be paid for, but they would not do so. They looked into their huts, and did not find that they had any food in them, for they had carried it off. There were assembled there more than eight hundred *gandules*, all very robust, and they did not dare to disband, for they already had news of our people.

Then they departed, and at a league from thence, they sighted another village, and again they landed, and found that the Indians of the village further back had arrived there, and more than one thousand five hundred came forth to encounter them. And when they saw that our people went towards them with determination, and that they were no more than twenty-two, they sat down, feigning to desire peace, and not one brought any kind of weapon, and all were assembled; and they said that they would give them *nanbolos* (pigs). Don Hernando showed them much friendship, and gave them to understand that he was not going to do them harm, and that they should bring the *nanbolos* and food, and that they would be paid for them. And thereupon the *tauriqui* went about very urgently, ordering his Indians to bring it, but they would not; and after much persuasion he made them bring about one sackful of roots, and each man brought only one root, and, if any one brought two or three, they came dividing them among the rest of the Indians, so as to pretend that they all brought some; and they laughed a great deal, making a joke of it. And when Don Hernando saw this, and that it would never come to an end, he ordered their houses to be searched, and this was done, and they found but very little food. And in order that our men should not search them, they gave them a pig, and said that they had sent for another, [and asked] them to embark; and so they did, because they had received them in peace; and they sat down to eat, all the natives looking on; and they saw that two Indians were bringing a pig along the shore, and that, as soon as they saw that our men had embarked, they concealed it. Don Hernando ordered Gaspar de Colmenates to land with some arquebusiers, to see whether they would give it through fear, and these men would have done so, but the Indians said that they would give it, and bade our men remain quiet. They brought it out of the place where they had hidden it, and gave it to them; and as a negro and an Indian were bringing it back to the brigantine, a soldier discharged an arquebus in the air, and all the natives rose up and took to flight. They called them, and they returned and sat down. Then, when the negro who was bringing the pig with the Indian heard the arquebus, and saw the Indians rise up, he thought that a battle was beginning, and he put his hand to his sword, and, setting the pig loose, he gave the Indian a gash on one arm, but the wound was not very large. And when the natives became calm again, they approached our men, and showed them the wound, giving them to understand that, although they had received them in peace, they had done them this hurt. Don Hernando was much grieved, and before them all, he severely rebuked the soldier who had discharged the arquebus and the negro. And then the native showed them a great tusk, which seemed to be that of an elephant, in token of peace and friendship;[1] and thereupon the exchange for what they had given was left with them.

They set sail in all haste with the wind astern, and arrived at the settlement before mentioned, whence many Indians had come out to them;[2] and as the wind was boisterous, with showers, and there was no shelter, they went forward to seek it. Some Indians of that village followed them along the shore, running and shouting to them to go to it, for they would give them pigs; and although it rained heavily, they followed them in this manner for more than 2 leagues, till they put into a sheltered place behind a point, because night was falling; and there were many showers, which lasted all the night.

And when the Indians saw that they were anchored, they went into the water to speak to them; among them came the one whose canoe had been ransomed when they had passed there; and he brought them some food and made signs of peace to them, and signified that in the morning they would bring them a pig; and they departed to their village, which was behind; and our people remained there all night.

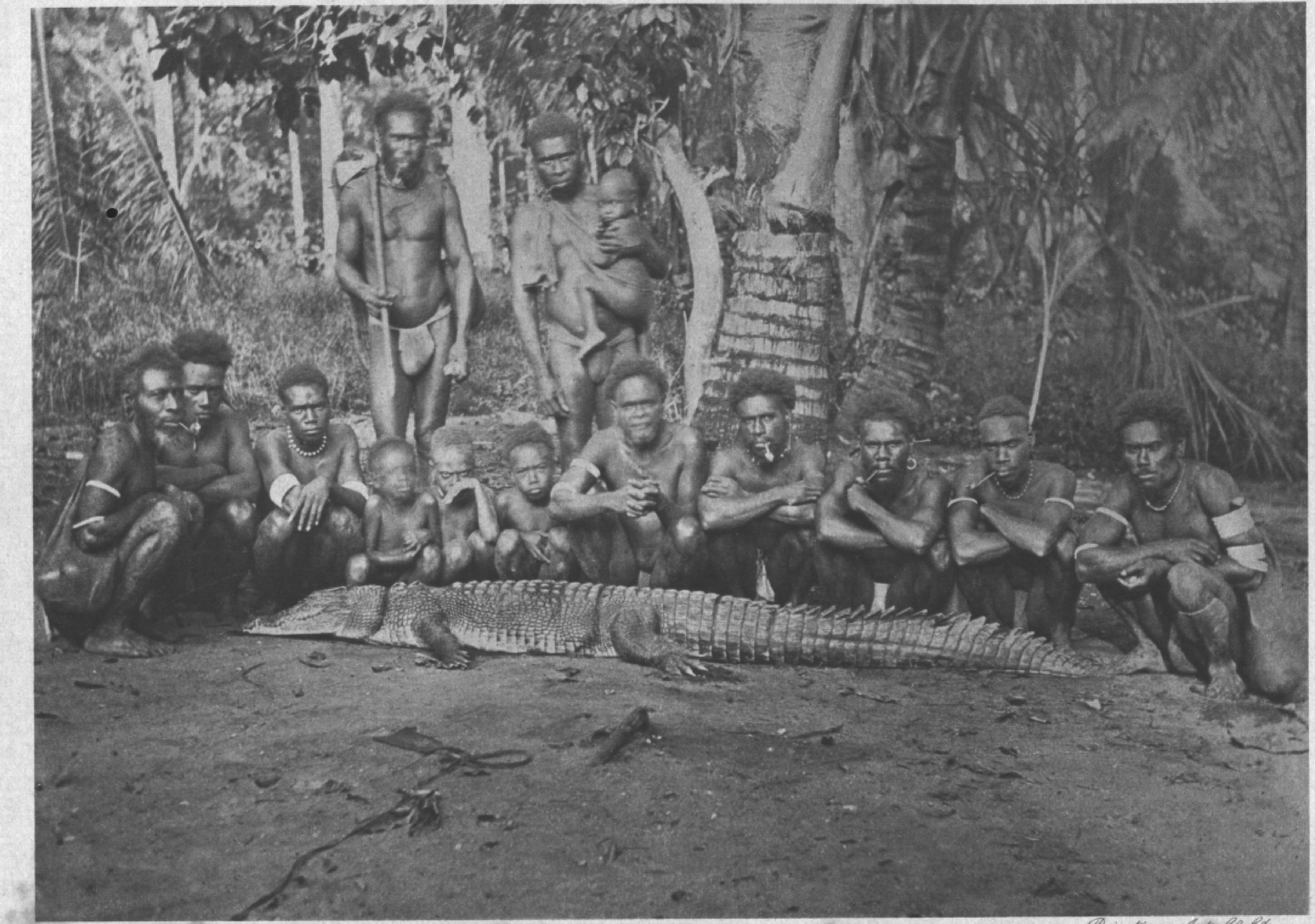
---

[1] Probably the tooth of a dugong, which is highly prized in Ysabel Island, or possibly a sperm-whale's tooth.

[2] Aola village.

The next day, Saturday, the 5th of the said month, they landed among some palm-groves. There were large villages and a fertile land, cleared and pleasant, and of good appearance, where there were many *chacaras.* They found the doors of all the huts barricaded: they went to a large one, where they found a great quantity of food, and nothing else, nor did it appear to have been inhabited by any one. It was understood to be the storehouse of the huts near it, and that, if they asked for [food], the Indians would not barter for it. They began to take some of it, and to put it on board without hindrance; on the contrary the Indians did not dare to approach. Don Hernando called to them, and some approached, and helped to put it on board. While this was proceeding an Indian came with a large pig, and gave it to them, and requested them not to take any more food; and since they had received them in peace and given the pig, Don Hernando commanded his men to cease, as he would get some more further on. And they did so, but they had a good quantity from thence, there being four canoes full.

While they were putting it on board, there came one of those Indians who had gone in the canoe the night before, very tired, and he asked them to wait, as another *nanbolo* (pig) was coming, and also the *tauriqui* of the great village which was behind; and the pig was not long in coming, being carried by two Indians; and then the *tauriqui* arrived, who was very old, and with him some other very elderly Indians, and many young men, all without arms; and in this manner there assembled more than one thousand five hundred.



Printing Arts Co. Ld. sc.

Natives of Aola (Urare) with Alligator.

Don Hernando embraced him, and showed him much friendship. The first thing the *tauriqui* said to him was that they should kill Ruabatu,[1] giving it to be understood that he was his enemy; and he pointed out to him where his dwelling was, it being in the direction where they had to pass; saying that the Indians of Ruabatu had shot arrows at our people, and had killed some of them; and that he well knew that our people did not harm those who came to them peaceably; and with this he sought to give them every satisfaction, because in those places our men had not done them any harm, nor had they received any; for they had news of all that had occurred. In the meantime twenty-seven Indians came by sea in a canoe, which was the one they had held to ransom when they had passed by there; and although our men had broken the stern, they brought it repaired and very smart. They disembarked, and went to speak to Don Hernando, asking him to kill Ruabatu, and complaining earnestly of him, saying that they would aid him. Don Hernando told them that it was not [necessary], for he alone would kill him and all his Indians; at which they rejoiced greatly. Don Hernando desired them to put them on board the brigantine in their canoe, as there were rocks, and they had disembarked with the water up to their waists; but they declined; and when our people saw this, they themselves got into it, and when they gave them to understand that they would not harm them, some of them embarked, and they carried our people to the brigantine in two journeys; and all their concern was that our people should kill Ruabatu. And when our men again consented, being about to set sail, the *tauriqui* commanded his Indians to bring them more food, and they did so.

---

[1] Meaning the people of Ruavatu, a village a few miles east of the Bokokimbo River.

And thereupon they departed, resting well content with our friendship, for they easily perceived that it was the best thing for them. Don Hernando gave them goods in exchange for that which they gave, and for that which had been taken from them. And then, because the sick were fatigued, our people set sail, in order to cure them.

And Our Lord always gave them a stern wind, and the brigantine went along with all speed. And in a little while they reached the river of Santa Helena, which has two mouths, as has been said, and they entered through one of them into the interior, and they reached a village where they had been when they had passed that way. Here they landed and got some food, without the natives hindering them, although they asked the Indians to barter it before they took it from them, but none of them appeared. And when they had almost finished shipping it, there came forth to them the *tauriqui* of that village, to whom they had given a cap and beads and other things, and two Indians with him, and they brought a pig, and asked them to go away, and not to take any more food from them; and they left the pig some distance off, without daring to come near. Don Hernando gave them barter for everything.

They departed thence, with the determination not to land any more until [they came to] the ships. They had discovered six other islands, and approached four of them, which are: first, that of San German, then that of La Treguada, that of San Juan, and that of San Tomas:[1] they are all inhabited by a fine and numerous population. They did not go to all of them for the reasons aforesaid. Don Hernando ruled well in all things in war as well as in peace, and as Hernando Gallego has the altitude and the courses, which will tell everything, no more is said touching this discovery made in the brigantine.

---

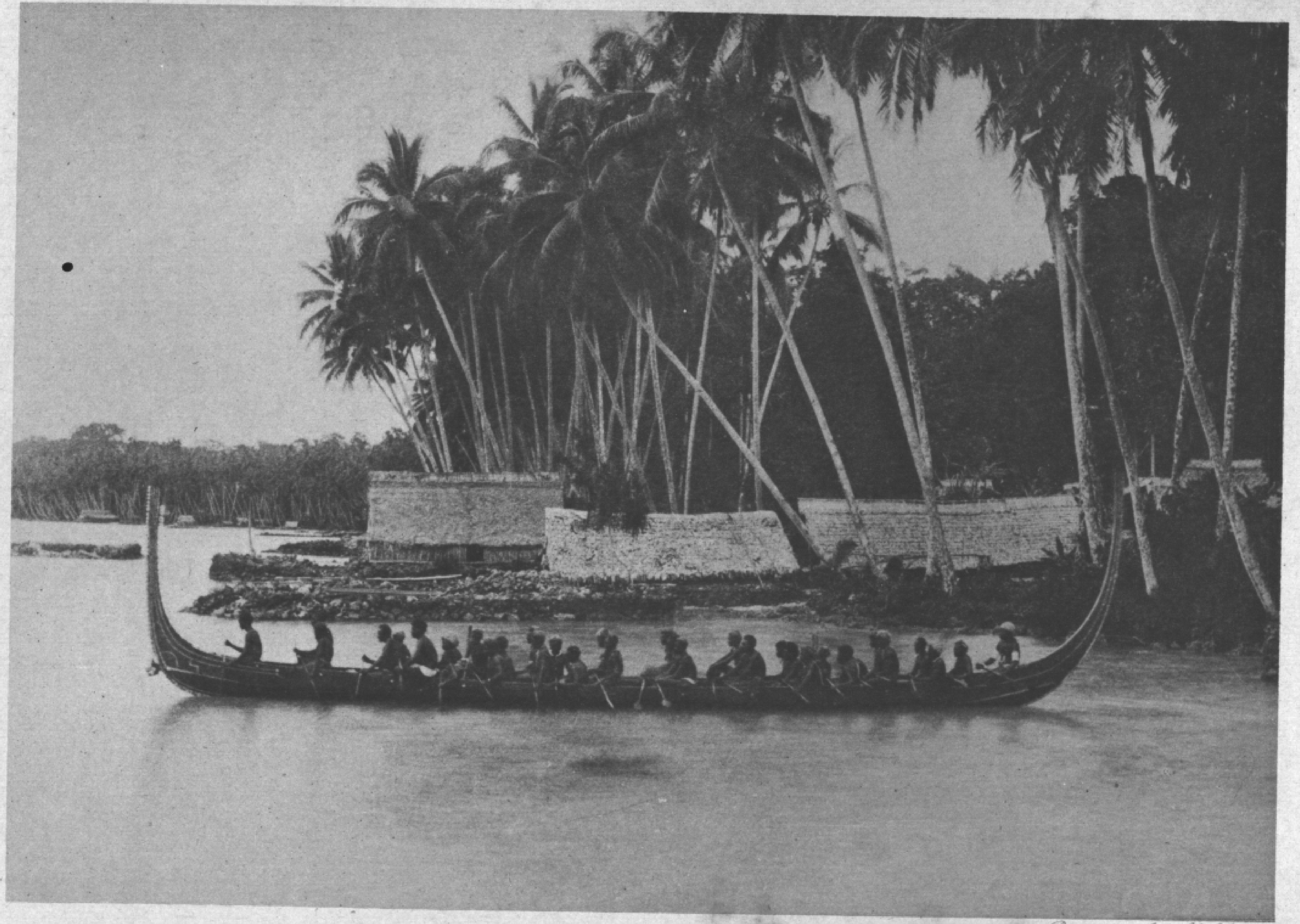
[1] San Tomas is doubtless a mistake for Santiago, the name given to the north coast of S. Christoval.

On the 9th of June, after the arrival of the brigantine, while four arquebusiers were on a small islet near the ships making ammunition and some sailors were preparing some sails, in preparation for leaving the port of La Cruz, as it appeared to the natives that our men were but few, and that, as in the past, they had got a prize, a canoe of Indians came to them, in which were ten Indians, who approached the place where our men were.

And when the arquebusiers saw them coming, they made an ambush, telling the rest of their companions to remain quiet, in order that the Indians might approach them. Then, as it appeared to the General that the Indians might have some ambush near the coast (which was distant only a stone's throw) whence they could easily pass by swimming, he sent Captain Sarmiento there with some arquebusiers to succour them should anything happen, and to endeavour to capture the canoe and the Indians. The boat departed in all haste, and so quickly did he land, hiding himself from the islet, that he came upon the natives; and already those of our people on the islet had fired some arquebus-shots, and caused them to abandon the canoe, so that there remained in it only one single Indian, and the rest had taken to swimming from fear; and one of those who were swimming grasped the side of the canoe in order to get in; and when the Indian in it saw the boat, he began to deal the other blows with a club until he killed him, because he was stopping the canoe. Then two other Indians interfered, and when our men began to shoot at them, all those who went in the boat [*sic*] threw themselves into the sea, and he who killed the other gave them [blows?] also, to drive them from the canoe; and when he found himself alone, he began to betake himself in all haste towards land, with our men following him, though at a distance, when the boat struck on some rocks. They continued following him and giving chase, firing many arquebus-shots at him, so that he should not escape them; and as there was a swell they did not hit him till he reached the shore and jumped from the canoe, and went running off. Then a soldier gave him a bullet between the shoulders, which caused him to fall, but he immediately rose again, and went on running away from them; and in order to overtake him, Captain Sarmiento and some shield-bearers jumped into the water up to the breast, and two negroes followed him. One of them reached him, and gave him a cut, which laid him open between the shoulders, and he fell backwards. Some arquebusiers landed, and others remained in the boat to capture the rest, who were swimming about. At this juncture the General went with the rest of the men, thinking that there was need for help, because from the ships many Indians could be seen on land; and he ordered some soldiers to run down the shore to the place where the Indians were seen swimming, to prevent them from landing; and gathering the rest as he went along, he came to the canoe, and found in it a large pig, with which it was understood they were coming to beguile our people by enticing them with it, and to capture them by treachery;[1] for there were ten of them, though our men saw no more than seven, for the others were stowed away in such a manner that they were invisible. They carried many lances, clubs, and arrows. And because the boat had gone more than half a league in pursuit of the Indians, who swam like fish down the coast, they went along

---

[1] It is possible that the pig was being brought as a peace-offering for the massacre of the boat's crew, and that the natives thought it safer to negotiate with the small party on the islet than to approach the ships.



Printing Arts Cº Lᵈ sc.

War Canoe. (Guadalcanar.)

the shore as far as the place which it had reached; and when they met together, the men of the boat had already been fighting with the Indians, for they had taken three alive, one being wounded by an arquebus-shot, and the rest had been killed or drowned. The General gave the order to bring them in the boat, and also the one who had been killed on the shore at the place where they had killed our men; and he and the soldiers returned along the shore. And when they arrived at the place where the boat, in which they had put off, had remained, a soldier perceived that the Indians were throwing stones from the bush at our men who were in it, with which they struck the shields which were put up for defence. And when they saw this, they made an attack on them, and they all went running away. And arriving at the spot where they had killed our men, the General ordered them to bring the dead Indian and the wounded one, and to cut off their heads, and to quarter them, and their [quarters] were placed [there]. And the other two were hanged further on, in sight of the ships, in such a manner that the living Indians saw it, and he ordered that another should be taken to the River Gallego, which was near by, from whence the Indians issued forth every day, and that he should be hanged by the legs; and the heads of both were placed on poles. And this having been done in the sight of many Indians who were visible from thence, they returned to the ships, and brought the two living ones.

On the following day the General went ashore with all the company to hear Mass; and they saw that the natives had already removed the four quarters of one Indian, but had not come near to the one who was hanged, nor the heads; but after returning to the ships we saw that they were approaching him. The order was given to aim a piece of artillery at them in all haste, and it was levelled at the place where they were; and when the shot came among them they went flying off without removing [the bodies], and afterwards they dared not come near to take them; but one night they took away one head, making much wailing, for we heard it from the ships.

And then the ships prepared with speed to leave Puerto de la Cruz, in the Island of Guadalcanal, to discover more lands, so as not to lose time, and also because some had fallen sick, and a soldier had died on board the *Capitana.* At this time there were thirty-eight sick. We had been there thirty-two days awaiting the brigantine, and in the meantime they were making preparations. And that the Indians of that province should not remain without chastisement for having killed our men by treachery, under cover of the peace and friendliness which we had with them, the General determined to go thither in person, on the 12th of June, with all the men who were in good health, to a river, which at a distance of a league-and-a-half had upon its banks great villages and a number of people, for it was understood that those who had killed our men had come from thence; and we departed this day three hours before daybreak, so as not to be heard or seen by the Indians, and to come upon them before daylight; and for this purpose we started with the brigantine and the boats. There went the General, the Master of the Camp, the Ensign-General, the Ensign, and the pilots. We pursued our voyage until we arrived near the mouth of the river, and it was some time before we all landed; and the Master of the Camp put the troops in order, and the General took the vanguard, and Sarmiento the rearguard; and after the Master of the Camp had put the troops in order, we began to march along the seashore, and afterwards up the bank of the river; and although we went in silence and kept ourselves in the bush, we were soon heard by them, for they had posted sentinels, who, on hearing anything, have the means of communication by great [volumes of] smoke, and by fires at night. And when they heard us they all armed themselves, and beat all their great drums, and shouted. And at this time the day broke; and, although we found the road bad, and had many channels of water to pass, the water coming up to our girdles, we made haste, and did not delay in reaching their villages, of which we saw many fair ones up the river. It seemed to be the most delightful land that there is in the world. The abundance which the people appear to possess cannot be expressed. And when the Indians saw us, they took to flight; and only a few came out, for there was a great number of them; and when we had passed through some villages on the other side of the river, which was already deep, we saw a village, which consisted of more than two hundred houses, where the Indians did not stay, but only appeared at a distance, where little harm could be done to them.

The General ordered them [the huts] to be burnt, in order to see whether, thereupon, they would come to defend them. And while they were burning them, some ten or twelve Indians came to make an attack on Sarmiento and the soldiers with him, who were going about burning them. Some arquebusiers went to meet them, and without showing front they fled away; and two, who remained behind, when they saw that they were being overtaken, took to swimming along the river. A sailor killed one of them with an arquebus-shot. Then, since no harm could be done to their persons, after having burnt the huts on the other side of the river, the General determined to return, and gave the order to burn another village, the greatest punishment that could be given them. While this was being done, the barbarians from afar made fierce threats to us, though they dared not come near.

And after we had burned them, at the end of them we came upon a very straight and level road, which might be a little less wide than the Inca road of the plains of Peru, and as straight; on either side of it there was a large number of young palm-trees, all planted in regular order, which shaded the whole of it [from the] fierce sun and heat. We travelled along it for a good while, sheltered from the sun, and in the cool; and when we thought it time to return to the sea, where the brigantine and boats had remained, we did so. Then, when the barbarians saw us returning, some of them began to follow us with great menaces, brandishing their clubs; and when we reached a small wood, we made an ambush, in order to give them a volley of arquebus-shots should they come near; and this being done, we waited some time in ambush. The barbarians approached to enter the bush, and sent one in advance, as they suspected what there was, for they are cautious, and make ambushes very well; and the Indian entered into the wood with his lance, looking from side to side, and carrying one in readiness to throw, and the way not seeming safe to him, he turned back; and when a soldier saw him turning, he fired an arquebus-shot at him, and was much rebuked; and we all went forth after the one who had turned back; and they all fled. We marched back, and in a short time put off to sea, at the place where the boat and the brigantine had waited, and we returned on board.

Notwithstanding the many treacheries and knaveries which they used with us, the Indians of this island did not dare to remove the cross already mentioned, which we had placed on the hill, nor another, which was placed in the islet, although they passed the places where they were many times; and certainly it was through God's grace, for although they passed the places where they were many times, and stopped to look at them, they did not dare to go near—a thing which astonished us, and seemed to us a miracle; nor did they destroy the church which we had built, which was regarded as a good omen.

We found in this island all the things which have been mentioned as being in the island of Santa Ysabel; and besides those, they have pigs and fowls, and roots, some large and others small, which they call *panaes*, and ginger in abundance; and the Indians of Santa Ysabel, whom we took with us as interpreters, said that there was some in their island, but not much. The people of Guadalcanal have much advantage over those of Santa Ysabel, for they are more robust and blacker than they, and have even better villages and houses. The people in the island of Guadalcanal are so numerous as to cause astonishment, for according to the number of villages which we saw in it, and those which were seen by our people in the brigantine, there must be more than two hundred villages in the whole island, and fifty thousand fighting men. The island, as it seemed, might be about 250 leagues in circumference, or even more: for, according to the information given by those who went with Andres Nuñez, there is much land towards the south and south-west.

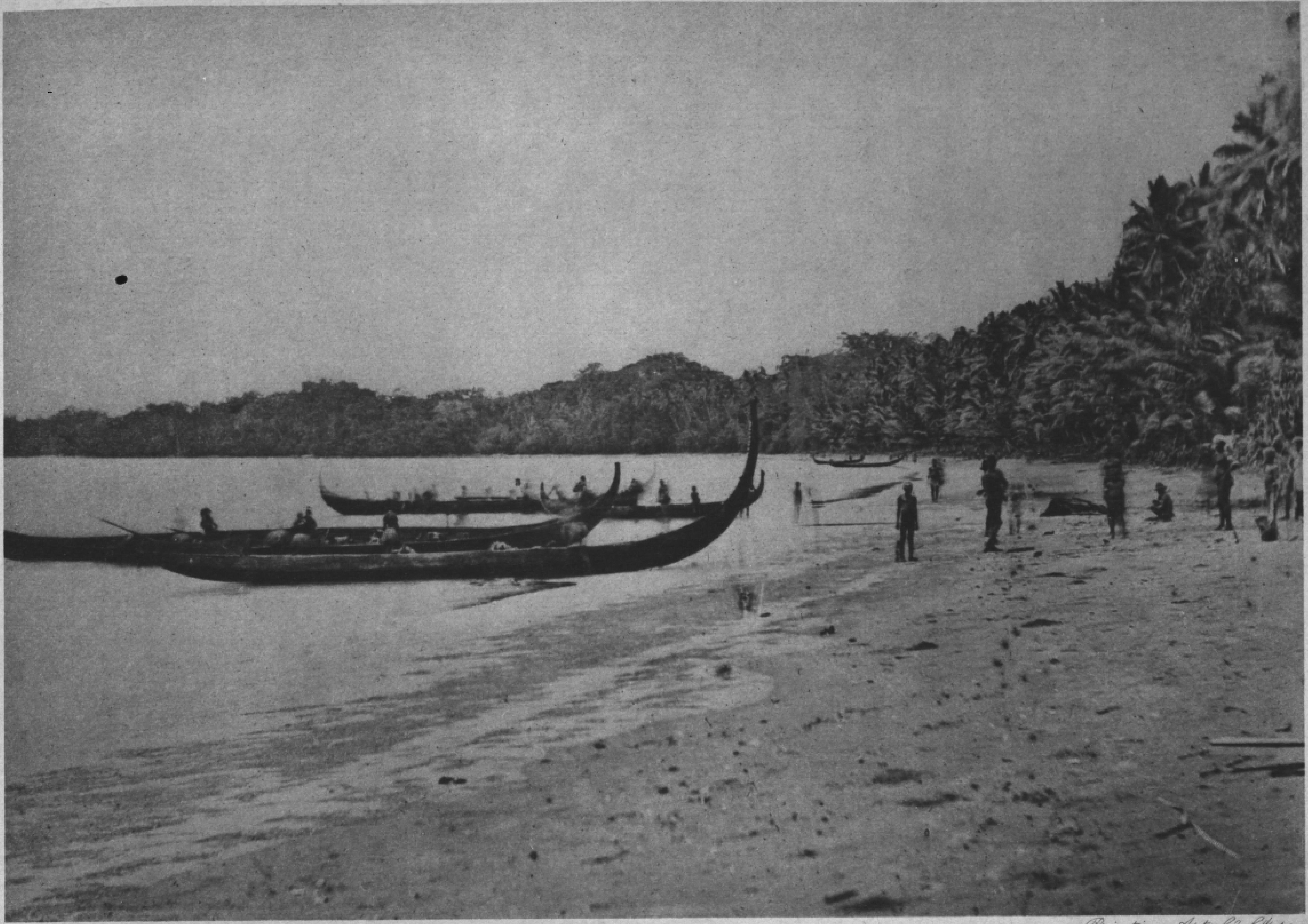
On the Sunday of the most Holy Trinity, which was the 13th of June, the General and the clergy and all of us landed to hear Mass, with the determination to leave Puerto de la Cruz next day at daybreak, so as not to lose a moment in discovering more lands, and to proceed to a higher latitude in a cold country, because all the men were sick, and it was thought that there would be more and better land [in that direction]: and so we set sail at midnight in the name of the most Holy Trinity, praying His Divine Majesty to be pleased to give us a prosperous voyage; and with His aid we began to coast along that island, between the island San Dimas and that of Ramos,[1] which the Indians call Malayta, being 12 leagues one from the other: and between them there were many reefs and shoals, which put our ships in great peril. So little by little we coasted, sailing from midnight to morning with the land breeze, but, after day broke, it came ahead, and obliged us to remain at anchor all day. On Wednesday, the 16th of the said [month of] June, we anchored near land for the above reason. The General disembarked with the Master of the Camp and the Chief Pilot and the rest of the healthy men to examine a village, of which he had had report as being in that district, and on landing, we found all the natives arrayed in order, and under arms, and they immediately came towards us, making their usual hostile demonstrations. And as they began to shoot arrows, those who went in the vanguard fired some arquebus-shots at them, which caused them to flee; and they were ordered not to fire any more, in order to see whether they could be attracted peaceably by good words and signs. But although we made these, they would not wait; and so we went on towards the village, and the natives fled, some behind us, and these twice attacked the rearguard, throwing lances and arrows from the bush. And when some arquebusiers and shield-bearers faced them, they fled away. We arrived at the village, where among the houses we saw many Indians, who seemed to number about five hundred. The General spoke to them in a very friendly way, and signs were made to them showing that we sought friendship with them; and the interpreter was told to ask them to give us a few pigs in barter, of which there was need for the sick, for this was why we had come ashore; but they could not be induced to give them either by fair means or foul, although our people made signs that they would burn one of their huts; and the poorest one was burnt, yet although they saw it they would not give way; and because, had they taken some by force, it would have been necessary to kill many of them, to avoid this the General gave orders that we should return. And while we were going along they began to shoot some arrows at us; and when we were about to embark, they came down to the shore to us, threatening us. Two arquebus-shots were fired, and they fled away; but in spite of all these insults no pursuit was made, nor was any damage done to them. In that same village they had come forth in warlike array against our people when they had passed with the brigantine, and had brought the dummy pig in order to seize them. And at midnight we set sail, and began to run along the coast with the wind off the land.

---

[1] Catoira here gives correctly the name bestowed upon Malaita.

On the Thursday following, which was the day of Corpus Christi, being the 17th of the said month, at daybreak, we looked for the brigantine, which was going under sail, and although we ran till the afternoon, we saw no signs of her, either at sea or on the coast, which troubled us. It was supposed that the men who were in her had landed to take water, although they had been ordered to come on board the *Capitana* to take it whenever it might be necessary; and that, as they were but few, the Indians might have killed them. And as Hernando Gallego said that in that part there was shelter and a harbour for the ships, where it was supposed the brigantine might be anchored, we went in that direction, and reached it this day in the afternoon, and there we found the brigantine under the shelter of an islet. We anchored close to it, and Hernando Gallego landed with some soldiers; he went to an islet near it, to see whether there were any pigeons for the sick, who were weak. And while they were shooting, a canoe of Indians came to them, and Don Hernando spoke to them, for they had known him already when the brigantine had passed, and they had come to meet them peaceably, and given them two pigs in order that they might kill Ruabatu, who is chief of another province; and they repeated the same request, and said that if they would do so, they would give more pigs, which they call *nanbolos*; and when they were told that this should be done, they brought the canoe full of their food, and brought it to the ships, saying that they had sent for pigs, and that they would bring them next day; and much friendship was shown them, because there were many Indians and because they had received Don Hernando in peace when he passed with the brigantine, and us also.

On the Friday following we landed with all the men, and the feast of Corpus Christi was celebrated, and Mass was said by the clergy, and we returned to the ships. And Don Hernando landed with some men at the place where the natives had their settlement, which is at the edge of the water, to take some. And the natives, numbering about a thousand, came towards our men; and when they saw that our men were going towards them, they all seated themselves unarmed, showing that they desired peace and friendship. Don Hernando ordered them to take the jars and fill them with water in a river which was close by, and they did so with goodwill, and put it into the boats. And during the time that they were conveying four boat-loads of it to the ships, the natives held conversation with them, showing that they were delighted with our men, and they gave them cocoanuts to eat, although they were distrustful of them; for while this was going on, the women were passing very near where they were, all being laden with their food and other things to hide them. And when our men saw this, Don Hernando asked them by signs, in such a manner that they understood it, why they did so, because we were not going to take anything from them, since they had received us in peace, and thereupon they ceased doing this. So they took leave of them, embracing them, and showing them much friendship, and they doing the same to us, without taking from them any of their food unless



Printing Arts Co. Ld. sc.

Trading Canoes leaving Guadalcanar.

they gave it of their own goodwill; and our people returned to embark. And when the Indians saw that there was no harm done to them as had been done to others because of their treachery, when night was coming on, they came to the ships to ask us not to go away, as they had sent for two pigs, and would bring them on the morrow; and from what was understood it appeared that they had but few, and these far off in the hills. And when signs were made to them that we had to leave that night, and we spoke to them as though we were annoyed because they had not brought them before, deeming that they were putting us off with words; seeing this, they went off at once, and did not delay long in bringing two pigs, and they gave them without asking anything for them. Some things were given to them in exchange, and they departed very contented, and we set sail at once. The General ordered the pilot who went in the brigantine to be put in the stocks, because he had not come to the *Capitana* when she anchored, to learn what was wanted; but afterwards he ordered him to be set free, commanding him that from henceforth he should not leave the ships.

Next day, Saturday, the wind began to increase in such a manner that, as it was contrary, we went close-hauled, and the brigantine could not keep up with the ships; and in order that she should not remain behind, we went alongside of her, and towed her astern.

It happened that, as the wind was increasing every hour more and more, and was very rough, while the ship was putting about to tack, the brigantine came athwart our prow and passed to the other side, whereby the tackle was caught in an anchor; and, as the ship was rolling heavily, it was feared that she would send her to the bottom, for at every roll of three or four which she gave, she caused her sides to go under water, and smashed them; but Our Lord was pleased that, on a sailor cutting the ropes, she was freed, which certainly we considered very lucky, for we thought that she was lost, and some men who were in her threw themselves into the ship, and two of them broke their legs and shin-bones in getting in; and, because we had need of her for making discoveries, she was not let go, although for the time it seemed very necessary to do so; and we towed her in spite of the great trouble and hindrance which she caused us; for, as we were sailing close-hauled, it was necessary to tack many times in order that the same thing should not happen to us again. We made stern-way, and lost part of the way we had made and more, for she hindered us much from going ahead.

We went in this manner for ten days, always with a contrary wind, and with showers and other troubles, without being able to find a harbour in any of the islands which had been discovered; and most nights it was necessary to put ourselves in a cross sea, because of the high wind and showers. And, as there was a good harbour for the ships in the island of San Juan[1] for careening them, of which they had much need, while more lands were being discovered with the brigantine, an attempt was made to go to it; and plying to windward all the time, we could not do so, for the causes aforesaid; and so we went coasting toward the end of the island of Santiago, which is broad, to see whether there was any harbour in it that we could make, for although he [the General] had gone out from Guadalcanal with the determination to go well out to sea to discover more land, such was our fate, for the sailors and the soldiers who helped in trimming the sails were so fatigued, especially the sailors who were so requisite for the work, that we could not do so.

As we ran up the coast we discovered another large island near that of Santiago, although it was barely visible and seemed to be all one island, or divided by a small arm of the sea. And we continued that day, the eve of St. John, the 23rd of the said month, upon that course on which we could not find a port, to see whether we could find one, or discover any islands; and as soon as we left the shelter of the island of Santiago the wind and waves increased in such a way, and grew so wild and angry, that we had to encounter a great tempest. And the wind was so violent that while a sailor was on the mizzen-mast furling the sail, the yard broke in the middle, and he lost his hold and fell from the top into the sea, commending himself to Our Lady, we all doing the same; and She miraculously delivered him, for, though he fell very wide of the ship, which was flying before the violent storm, when we rushed to look for him we found him clinging to some ropes which were dragging through the water, and he was so handy and agile that he climbed up without assistance. On another occasion this man had fallen into the gulf when the ship was under sail, and clung to some light ropes in the same way.[1] It was necessary to bear away, in order to seek the port at the end of the island of Guadalcanal from which we had put out, and to which we were going, for the storm was increasing every moment. As we were keeping away, Our Lord was pleased that the fury of the wind and sea should begin to abate; and, seeing this, we bore up against the wind again to see whether we could reach the port at the end of the island of Santiago, which was sheltered, and close by. When night fell it began to rain heavily, and the wind was so violent that we were obliged to furl all the sails and lie in a cross sea. And as the currents were strong, and the wind and rain, which did not cease all night, very great, we found ourselves in great danger, being among islands, and unable to sail either to one side or the other, and we feared that the ships would strike upon one of them ; but as Our Lord always favoured us through the intercession of His Blessed Mother, we were very fortunate.

---

[1] Ugi Island.

---

[1] His name was Juarez Mendez (see p. 221).

The next day, which was the feast of St. John, the weather was very threatening, and we sailed along, plying to windward with only the fore-storm-sail set, in order not to fall away. Seeing this, a collection was made among all—pilots, soldiers, and sailors—for the house and work of Our Lady of Guadalupe of Peru ; and all besought Our Lord, through the intercession of His Glorious Mother, that He would deign to assist us in this necessity, and give us fair weather and a prosperous voyage ; and all contributed what they could. Then they drew lots who should be the pilgrim to carry it thither. The wind began to grow calmer, and we plied to windward along that coast, tacking far out to sea to discover whether there were any other land, but we did not see any. And as the wind was always against us we could not double the cape, nor make the port during the fifteen days that our voyage had now lasted. Then, seeing that we made little way, and that there were occasional gusts of wind and rain, and the sea was growing rough, and the ship's tackle was broken by the fury of the wind, and the rain-storms had carried away the sails, and the sailors were few, and several soldiers who helped them were wearied and exhausted with the labour, for the food that they had for their sustenance was such that they had not strength to manage the sails, Hernando Gallego resolved to go and find a port. Therefore, during a short lull, he went on board the brigantine with some arquebusiers and shield-bearers, so that should the storm increase while we were plying to windward to double the cape, a port might be discovered. And so he did, and he found a very good one, a large part of it sheltered, although it appeared to be in a very bad district, for on the south side all was high and rugged mountain. As soon as he had discovered and reconnoitred it, night closed in, and they came out to fetch the ships which were plying to windward, and they went about all night seeking them and signalling with lights, and as we were keeping well out to sea, he resolved to return to the port, in order not to be overtaken by a squall; and daybreak found them there, and they had not a drop of water. Five arquebusiers landed to get some from a village near the water's edge, and three dozen Indians came out peaceably to meet them with their women, and they gave them the jars in order that they might bring them the water, and they did so, and put it on board, and thereupon our men embarked without damaging anything belonging to the Indians. And as they were leaving the port, we came in with the ships, and the brigantine approached, and they came on board, and Hernando Gallego having reported the bad situation and lack of food there, it was agreed that we should go forward, for the weather was clearing. We plied to windward for another two or three days, during which we made no way, but rather fell to leeward, and the tackle was broken by the fury of the wind, sea, and rain.

Going on our way in the midst of these storms and tempests, it happened that, on the 1st of July at daybreak, we looked for the *Almiranta,* and she was not in sight; this grieved us very much, for she had been carried out to sea, and it was necessary to follow the sea tack in quest of her. And when we sighted her far to leeward we joined her, and then, upon the advice of all, it was agreed that Hernando Gallego should go out again, as usual, to find a port, for now we could not put in to that which he had discovered, having fallen more than 5 leagues to leeward of it, and it was not fit weather for the ships to tack any more without being repaired. And so it was done.

The brigantine departed with Don Hernando Henriquez and some soldiers, and it pleased Our Lord that they should immediately find what was desired, and, having sounded, he hoisted the brigantine's flag in order that we might enter with the ships. And so we entered and anchored. And after dinner the General landed with all the rest, and we carried the royal standard. And on reaching a village which was on the shore the natives immediately came to us; and they came also to the ships in their canoes, and, though they were armed, they received us peaceably, but when they made the greatest show of peace it was to cover treachery, for so we found; they were not to be trusted, and when they came in this way we were the more on our guard against them. And we made signs of peace, and gave them to understand that we would do them no harm. The General took possession in the name of his Majesty, without opposition from the islanders. And this being done, water was brought, and the men were ordered to form in order; and when they had done so we went round to explore the whole village, which was a large one; and while doing so we saw among the houses cocks and hens of Castille, and pigs. The General ordered that nothing should be touched lest they should rebel, and lest they should conceal the food during the night, as it was late. And the Indians, men and women, went with us, watching us all, and carrying their arms, and when they saw that we did not take anything and showed friendship towards them, they did not rebel or become turbulent. And after a good while, when it was growing late, we embarked, intending to land the next day to treat with the natives so that they might barter with us for food for the victualling of the fleet, and, if they would not do so, to take it, for we were in need of it, and to leave them the articles of barter for it. We saw that the Indians posted sentinels all that night.

The next day, at daybreak, the General landed again with all the men well equipped, and with the articles to be bartered for food, and as we approached the natives came out to meet us well armed. The interpreters were ordered to speak to them, and tell them that we meant them no harm, and that if they would trade with us for food, we would pay them very well for it; but they took no notice of this, and seemed evilly disposed.[1] Then the men were formed in order by the Master of the Camp and Pedro Sarmiento, who posted them as best befitted the general safety. This being done, Don Hernando and the Master of the Camp, with sixteen soldiers, entered the village, and a shield-bearer was sent to see what was in the huts. And when the natives saw him go into one, they grew riotous, and followed them anxiously, and in such perturbation that they hastily shouted to one another to drive us out. We came upon three cocks among the huts, but as they could fly and we could not catch them, the General ordered them to be shot for the sick, and an arquebusier killed two with one shot. In the meanwhile, some Indians appeared, who seemed to be invoking the Devil by spells, for one, having drawn a circle, entered into it, and began to speak very fast in his own language, walking up and down without quitting it. And the Devil, as we supposed, entered into two of them, for the two made grimaces, and a violent shuddering shook them all over, and they were disfigured, making diabolical grimaces and performing other strange antics, which struck us with amazement.[2] After this, having examined the houses, in which were found great quantities of food, as the Indians were taking to their arms, we all went down to the shore, and an order was given to sound the recall. And when all were assembled, the Indians, numbering about one hundred and fifty, came out against us, and some of them immediately began the hostile demonstrations which they use in war; and although signs were made to them to be quiet and peaceable, for we meant them no harm, to see whether persuasions would induce them to trade with us for anything, they would not do so. On the contrary, they advanced upon us step by step, with a great show of ferocity and wildness, bounding, stamping, and scratching up the sand with their feet and throwing it very high into the air, like a bull when he paws the earth, and it was a sight to see. Nevertheless, we stood still and again called upon them to keep the peace, saying that we meant them no harm, and though we continued doing this for some time, they would not agree; on the contrary, their ferocity and haughtiness increased, and they brandished their lances, which they held ready for throwing, and though these are very tough, they [the Indians] are so strong, that they make them bend a great deal,[1] and they had their arrows ready fixed on their bows. And when the General saw how fearlessly and openly they approached, and that we were within the space of a spear's length from each other, and they were beginning to hurl their lances, for fear lest they should wound some of our men, he ordered several arquebuses to be fired, upon which one Indian fell dead and others were wounded; and they were seized with fear and all took to flight, abandoning their village, and were seen no more. Then we began to take food out of the huts and put it on board with all speed. We were all day about this, without any resistance from the natives; and after we had taken a good quantity, though we did not despoil them of everything, as night was closing in, we embarked, very wet and tired, for it rained all the afternoon. And as we neared the ships the natives came down to the village, where they posted their sentinels.

---

[1] It is doubtful whether interpreters from Ysabel and West Guadalcanal could be understood by the people of San Christoval, whose language belonged to a different group of dialects.

[2] This is a good description of the hysterical seizure which accompanies possession by a spirit.

---

[1] In poising the lance, a strong quivering motion is imparted to the shaft by a deft jerk of the elbow. It gives a very terrifying appearance to an advancing spearman, and it is much used in spear dances.

The next day, Saturday, the 3rd of the said month, we again landed with all the men; and when the islanders saw us, they fled to the mountain. Then Mass was said, and we dined on shore, having determined to remain and sleep there, in a large shed which held us all; and we slept there on Saturday, Sunday, and Monday, keeping good watch every night, without the Indians molesting us, or daring to come to the village. And while we were there the order was given for the brigantine to go to discover more lands. So the General determined to send Francisco Muñez with the Chief Pilot, Hernando Gallego, and fourteen arquebusiers and some shield-bearers, there being thirty in all. The order was given them to go up the coast of the Island of San Christoval,[1] where the ships were anchored, and to proceed to the end of it, and to seek and learn whether there were any more lands in that direction, and if there were any, to touch at them to see what was in them, and bring an account of everything. But if, on arriving at the end of it, they should not find land, they were to return; for, the brigantine being so small that it was little larger than a boat, it was not wise to leave one land without having another in sight, for she might get far out to sea (*engolfar*), and be lost. And so they set out the next day, the 6th of July, and that day we returned to the ships.

---

[1] This is Catoira's first allusion to this name. From Gallego we gather that the northern part of the island had been named Santiago, and the southern S. Christoval, in the belief that they were distinct islands.

Whilst the brigantine was away we landed every day to hear Mass, and do such other things as were consistent with our getting away from thence speedily, in order not to sleep on shore, for we were few. One morning before we landed, when the Indians saw us coming, they wished to try conclusions (*probar la mano*), and they came down to the shore and began to shoot arrows at us, opposing our landing. And as we attacked them with spirit, firing several arquebuses at them, they fled up the mountain. And though we landed and Mass was said, they did not dare to attack us.

The brigantine was eight days going and returning, and she reached the ships on the 14th of the said July. And when she arrived we were all on shore, and we returned immediately to the ships to hear what news they had brought, and when we arrived they gave an account of all that had happened to them, which is as follows:

THE THIRD VOYAGE OF THE BRIGANTINE.

On the 6th of July, [15]68, the brigantine departed. They entered a creek, which is higher up the said harbour, to see whether there were any mouth which emptied itself on the north side, so as to pass out through it; but they did not find one, for it was all mangroves. They returned, running up the coast.

The next day, Wednesday, the 7th of the same, in the afternoon, they reached the harbour which they had discovered with the brigantine when the ships were plying to windward; there they anchored and landed, and found that the Indians who had formerly received them in peace had become estranged. And though the captain called to them amicably, they would not approach, but took to their arms riotously. Seeing this, he gave orders to advance and examine their houses, and they found nothing in them. And as night was closing in they set about embarking, and they saw a likely (*bonyco*) lad up a palm-tree; and since the captain thought that it would be well to take him with them as an interpreter, they drew near and called to him, but he would not come down, but shouted to the rest to succour him, and they encouraged him from the mountain. And seeing that he would not come down, the captain ordered a negro to climb up and fetch him down. And when the Indian saw the negro coming up, he swung himself from that palm to another which was much higher, and no monkey in the world could have done it with such dexterity. Thereupon they began to cut down the palm to see whether the blows they gave it would make him come down, but he would not come down; on the contrary, he defended himself with great spirit, throwing down many cocoanuts, and fighting them until there were no more. Then the captain seeing that he defended himself and would not come down, and that the Indians were shooting arrows at them, and that when they felled the palm it must fall into the sea, so that the Indian would not be killed, he ordered them to finish cutting it down, and told some negroes to go into the water and catch him when he fell. And though the palm fell with a great crash, with the Indian clinging to it, he was not hurt, but with fine spirit he got free from the branches and swam away, so that they could not catch him, although a negro swam after him. And seeing that he had saved himself with such good courage and determination, being but a lad, they were glad. They slept there that night.

The next day, Thursday, they had a fair wind astern, and sailed all the morning very well, but at mid-day it increased in such a manner that it was necessary for them to put into a port which they found close by, and if they had not found it they would have been in great peril. They remained there that day and night; and they went up a very high hill, where there was no village, and from whence they scanned the sea thoroughly towards the south, and they could not see any appearance of other land.

Next day before daybreak they departed thence, and pursued their voyage with fair weather, and at ten o'clock they reached a part where they saw that all the coast was inhabited. They made for it, and saw the Indians coming in canoes, making them signs to come to their villages; and others who appeared upon the shore called to them also, their purpose being villainy, for it seemed to them that our men were but few and that they would divide them amongst themselves. When they reached the place where they were to land, about one hundred Indians came very joyfully, all armed with lances, arrows and clubs, making signs for our men to land and go with them, and so they did. They reached a river which was near by, and the Indians were plotting how each of them could carry off his prize to his house, and some of them came up to our men, making much of them, taking them by the hand and making signs that they should go with them and they would give them food and drink. Upon this it seemed to the captain that it would be well to take two or three boys as interpreters, because of the lack there was of them, and therefore he seized a boy and a shield-bearer seized another, and they put them on board the brigantine, and then the others fell into confusion and fled, and were seen no more. After this they explored five or six villages, and saw that there were many large pigs in the bush, and though they tried to catch some of them they could not do so, for they fled like deer at the sight of them, but they took five little ones in the houses. They found a quantity of almonds, like those of this country, which they took, and after this they embarked again. And seeing that no Indian appeared all this time, they landed and dined on shore unmolested. And in the afternoon they departed from thence, and sailed till night with a good wind astern; and to wait the rising of the moon, they put into a harbour where there was no village, and at the morning watch they went forward from thence with the same wind.

Next day, Saturday, the 10th of the same, at daybreak, a canoe came to them, in which there were a man and a boy, and they drew near and spoke, and the elder wished to come on board, but, when he found himself in the brigantine, he repented; but when the sailors saw this, they seized him, and others seized the canoe, and the boy threw himself into the sea, holding his bow and arrows in one hand and swimming with the other. They pursued him in the brigantine that he might not drown, for they were far from shore. He swam so fast that they could not catch him, until Jorge Gryego, a sailor, and another jumped overboard, and when the boy saw that they were gaining on him, he threw the bow and arrows both together into their faces. We marvelled at such daring and courage in a boy. They brought him on board the brigantine, where they had all the four fast bound, but they freed themselves every now and then, for their cunning is marvellous. Then other canoes appeared, but they dared not approach. And the captain wished to have the negroes and sailors punished for seizing them without his orders. And because the wind had dropped, and foul weather for their journey along the coast threatened them, before it came on they put into a creek which forms a haven, and there they saw two villages. And more than one hundred Indians, all armed, came out from either side of the shoals where we were anchored. From the signs they made it was understood that they wished us to show them the two Indians who belonged to that village; and we showed them, and asked whether they would ransom them and give four pigs in exchange for them, and then we would give them up. They said that they would do so, but as they did not go tc fetch them, but approached boldly, the captain ordered an arquebus to be fired at them, and thereupon they fled. And in a little while they returned with a pig, saying that they would bring more, and our people took it from them. In the meantime the eldest Indian was singing tunefully with a good grace, though they had him bound below deck so tightly that the ropes galled him; and it is wonderful with what courage both great and small face fortune, for certainly they do not appear cast down, and not one of them was ever seen to weep there, although they sought to regain their liberty; and when they are being bound they struggle and defend themselves so that it takes strong hands to do it. They were not long in returning with another pig, and as they did not go for any more, and had shown confidence in giving two without receiving an Indian, that they might not think that our people were men who did not deal truthfully, one was released, and the captain embraced him before them all and gave him beads. And when the other natives saw him coming they received and embraced him, and, taking him by the arms, led him to his village. Two of them remained and asked for the boy, and, that they might not think that we had eaten him, as they themselves do, the captain ordered him to be brought out; and he was shown to them, and they made signs that he should be given to them and that they would give pigs in return for him. Our men asked for four pigs, and they went to fetch them, and while they were gone for them our men went to a river which was close by. And when the natives saw them going, they sent them word not to go away, for they would soon come with the pigs. They landed there to take in wood and water, and found the Indians of that village under arms. They discharged stones and arrows; the captain ordered an arquebus to be fired at them, upon which they fled immediately. Our men entered the bush to see whether there was a village, and they found none, nor even a path. They took water and embarked, and in a little while the Indians came and brought two pigs, which they gave them. In the meanwhile they went back for the others, showing confidence, as the other Indian had been given up; and before long they brought two more and gave them, tied to a rope which was thrown to them, for they dared not approach. The captain gave him [the prisoner] beads, embraced him, and set him free, and he went off well pleased. A woman came with the Indians who ransomed him; she was thought to be his mother.

They slept there that night until the morning watch, and had heavy showers; and on the watch being set, they set sail, pursuing their voyage up the coast. And when it was day, they saw that the land was becoming low, and gave a turn, but the further they went up, the better it became, and there were more villages and *chacaras*, for they saw the villages very clearly all along the shore, and counted many more inland; and every village has from thirty to forty houses and more, and they are very near one another. They did not disembark to see what was in them, in order not to lose time, as they had to return that way. Going still further they passed near a high rock. They saw on the summit many Indians, who hurled stones and arrows, but as these did not come near enough to do them damage, they did not fire at them, though they might easily have done so. And so they pressed forward, and presently they discovered two islands which are 2 leagues from the end and headland of the Island of San Christoval, and beyond it. That day, in the afternoon, they reached the smaller, which is about 4 leagues in circumference.[1] They anchored off it, near a village on the shore, and the natives immediately came out to speak to them, telling them to land, and making signs that they would give them food. As there were surf and rocks where they had to land, they could not do so. And when the Indians saw this, a dozen of them swam out and came to the side. The captain called to them, showing them great friendship, and gave them beads and a cap; but nevertheless they would not come on board, and they imagined that these things were given them out of fear, for they made a sport and jest of them, showing great glee, and thinking to catch them by a trick; and they endeavoured with much persistence to induce our men to land, saying that they would give them pigs, which they call *apos* . . . .[1] Our men pressed them to come on board the brigantine, but they would not, and they returned to the shore and joined the rest. And after they had consulted together, many assembled and swam out, and some of them dived to get the kedge anchor, and one carried a flint to cut the cable. But, when our men threatened them, they turned aside; and in spite of all this insolence the captain gave orders not to fire on them. Upon this there came a robust *gandul,* large-limbed and well-built, with a lance in his hand; and, wishing to distinguish himself above the rest, he came on board the brigantine; and seeing this, about a dozen of the others followed. The captain embraced them and gave them beads, and they persisted in thinking that he did it out of fear. Presently some little boys swam out, but they would not come on board. Then the captain, thinking that it would be well to take one of them as interpreter, in order to be well provided, and also to exchange them for some pigs for the provisioning of the fleet—for they would not barter pigs for anything else, although they were asked to do so—ordered the negroes and sailors to lay hands on three or four, and they immediately did so, seizing five. They struggled so to escape that the brigantine heeled over till she was in danger of capsizing, and our men of falling overboard in their efforts to hold them; and they fought so hard that it was necessary to release them, for the waist-cloth had given way, and there was nothing to support our men in holding them, and so they all escaped to the shore. On reaching it they began to make threatening gestures, throwing the cap that our men had given them into the sea, jeering at them, making their usual warlike demonstrations, and turning their hinder parts towards them with unseemly impudence, so that our men were very eager to land. But, as it was night and there was a swell, they could not do so, and they left it till the next day. . . . .[1] They further saw that when all the Indians had assembled in a large shed belonging to the community,[2] they divided on either side, forming a lane in which an Indian did nothing but move to and fro with the steps and movements of a dance, and perform other antics. While he did so the rest stood by, looking on in deep silence. It was understood that he was making some compact with the Devil. He kept this up for more than three hours, until it was so dark that they could not see him. They gave that island the name of Santa Catalina. They slept there that night, keeping a look-out; the Indians remained in the large shed all night.

---

[1] Santa Catalina, or Owa-iki (Little Owa).

---

[1] The sentence continues: "y tanbien les darian mugeres, enseñandoles como avyan de usar con ellas; y como les hiziesen señas que no las querian y escupiesen dellas, se admiraban, y se miraban unos a otros."

The next day, Monday, the 12th of July, at daybreak, they began to make for the shore in the brigantine, intending to land and barter, or seize some pigs and hens, for they had seen many the day before. When the Indians saw that they were approaching the shore, some of them came out of the shed, while some waited with great dissimulation, and those that came out showered stones upon them with great fury. And because it was still dark our people did not see them coming, and the stones struck the shields continually, and even hit several arquebusiers upon the head; but, because they were light, and also owing to the coolness with which the shield-bearers warded off most of them, they hurt no one. Our men fired one arquebus and then several at the men whom they saw in the shed—aiming all their shots at them, for they could see them lighting a fire. Two or three immediately fell dead, and though the people in the shed took to flight, those who were outside, who had not seen all the damage done, although they pelted our people without seeing where they were aiming, persisted in the fight, and would certainly have wounded some if they had hurled lances and arrows. The captain, seeing this, and knowing that we could not repel them from the brigantine, jumped overboard with the water up to his chin, followed by the rest of the soldiers and the shield-bearers, all in good order, and he ordered the brigantine to be hauled ashore, that the arquebusiers might not get their ammunition wet. And when the islanders saw with what spirit our people attacked them, they all fled away, abandoning their village; and our people saw by their tracks how they had dragged away the dead. And the most they found in that village was almonds and roots and three pigs which were running to the hills through the bush. They killed them with the arquebuses, and, going to the spot where they heard a cock crowing, they found it with three hens, and though the birds ran, they caught them and killed them with their swords. They went through four villages which were close together, and found no more game, though they found many tracks of pigs. They came to another village, where they killed another pig, and they found a flock of fowls all together on the shore, and killed about a dozen. And with this they went further on, and saw the Indians flying to the bush with a great train of pigs behind them, and they could not overtake them, for they got into the woods. Then, as it appeared to the captain that there was no more than half a league to the end of the island, he thought that it would be well to go thither to see whether there were any more lands; and so they went forward along the shore, and looked all round, for it was clear, and they saw that there was none. And the captain ordered a sailor to climb a palm-tree, and he remained there gazing for a long while, and there did not appear to be any land; and they returned to the place where they had left the brigantine. And as they went along, four soldiers who were in the rear-guard lingered to kill a pig, and the soldier who had command of the rear-guard, seeing the captain going on, went after him and kept waiting for them; and though the captain shouted to him to call to them, they were gradually left behind, and the commander of the rear-guard reported how he had called to them, and they would not come. Then the captain grew angry and told the others to march on, for since they would not come, they might remain behind, as they would not follow him; and so they advanced for about a league. And when they returned, they found the four soldiers where they had left them, and they said that the natives had attacked them three times, and, if they had not shown good courage, they would have been killed, for a great many came against them, and the last time they were all but lost, when those who were with the captain fired an arquebus, upon hearing which the

---

[1] Here occurs the following passage: "Subcedio que como ellos estuvyesen juntos en esquadron, se pus un Yndio tras una arbol, do no le pudieron ver, donde, con gran desverguença, mostraba sus verguenças dandose con la mano, y aziendo otros vysajes. Y como le hiziese tres vezes, un soldado le tiro un arcabuzaço, que le hizo quitar de la conversacion, y se fue huyendo."

[2] The *Oka*, or public hall.

Indians left them. The captain reprimanded them, saying that they deserved to be hanged for not following him; and they replied that it was the act of a bad captain to desert them when they were busy in his service, and that he should look to it how he governed those committed to his care. Returning through the villages they took two large canoes, and in them they placed a large provision of almonds and roots without hindrance from the natives, who threatened them, but dared not approach. They embarked very weary with the chase and the heat. This island seemed to be well peopled; it is level and fresh, with savannahs but no running water, only pools, and they found one near the sea which had very fresh water. The captain took possession of this island in the name of His Majesty.

After dinner they set out for another island which is half a league distant, to take possession and find out what was in it. On arriving, they landed and entered a village, and they saw the Indians going about in great confusion, and they called to them, but they would not wait. They saw a pig going from one hut to another, as large and fat as those fattened in Spain, and though they were very close to it, it did not run away, but stood still, looking at them, for it could not move. They would not shoot at it with the arquebuses, thinking to seize and carry it to the ships alive, that the meat might not be spoilt. They surrounded and tried to hamstring it, and a soldier dug his knife into its ribs, and it made off to the bush which was near, and where they could not find it, and searching for it they found that the islanders were in ambush. Five or six came out and attacked the vanguard, and hurled three or four lances, and our people fired on them and they fled away, one of them with a few small shot and three stabs. They went through five or six villages which were in that district. They came upon seven or eight pigs, and saw the tracks of many more; they killed two and the rest fled, and they hunted them till evening without seeing an Indian. The captain took possession of that island, which he named Santa Ana; in the language of the Indians it is called Ytapa;[1] it might be about six leagues in circumference. At nightfall they embarked again, intending to sleep on board and land in the morning to look for more pigs and hens; and they remained there keeping watch, and saw no sign of any Indian.

The next day, Tuesday, the 13th of July, they landed at daybreak, and while the captain was marshalling the men as they disembarked, by good fortune a soldier fired an arquebus at a dog which came out of a hut, and killed it. They thought little of it, but through this they discovered two ambushes, which the Indians had skilfully arranged in the bush near the place where they landed; for at the report of the arquebus the Indians thought that they were discovered, and came out of one ambush on to the shore, very quietly. But, seeing them from the brigantine, Hernando Gallego gave the alarm, and our men advanced upon them with fine courage. There were about sixty Indians, who approached very near, and hurled many well-aimed darts with great fury; and, in their hurry to land, some of the arquebusiers had no tinder upon their match-locks, and they would not ignite, though five or six fired and hit some of the natives, for they were loaded with small shot and discharged into the crowd at very close range. Then the other party from the second ambush attacked the rear-guard, and, perceiving them, our men turned and faced them, preventing them from coming out on to the shore; and they fired four or five arquebuses at them, by which a savage was killed, and then they charged them and they fled, first hurling many arrows and darts, which struck the vanguard. They delayed a moment to do this, and it was extraordinary to see their quickness, and the skill and courage they displayed; and on our side the men faced them steadfastly though the arquebuses failed them. The Indians still persisted in the fight, advancing on them step by step, till, seeing that the arquebuses had failed them, our men were obliged to attack them hand-to-hand with swords and hatchets. At this time they struck Christoval de Soria, a soldier, with two darts, one of which wounded him in the loins, and the other in the temple, so that he fell, and when he rose he could not get the dart out of his head until a soldier drew it out by main force. When these barbarians saw him fall, their insolence and courage increased, and they began to fight more furiously; and then they wounded the captain by hurling a dart, and as he warded it off with his shield, it passed through the arm-strap and pierced his arm through and through, until the point stuck out on the other side. Then they wounded Bastian Res, a soldier and Purser of the *Almiranta*, in the loins. Seeing this, the captain called to the Spaniards "Santiago! charge!"[1] and he and six shield-bearers charged, and drove them back and defeated them; and had it not been for the good courage with which they did this, there would have been more killed and wounded on our side. They seemed to be a valiant race. They all wore garlands on their heads, and wore bands of *dama agua*,[2] of yellow and green, and other colours, which looked like taffetas from a distance. Each of them carried five or six darts for hurling, and a flint-headed lance[3] for fighting hand to hand. Two of the natives were killed, one in the vanguard and another in the rearguard, and others were

---

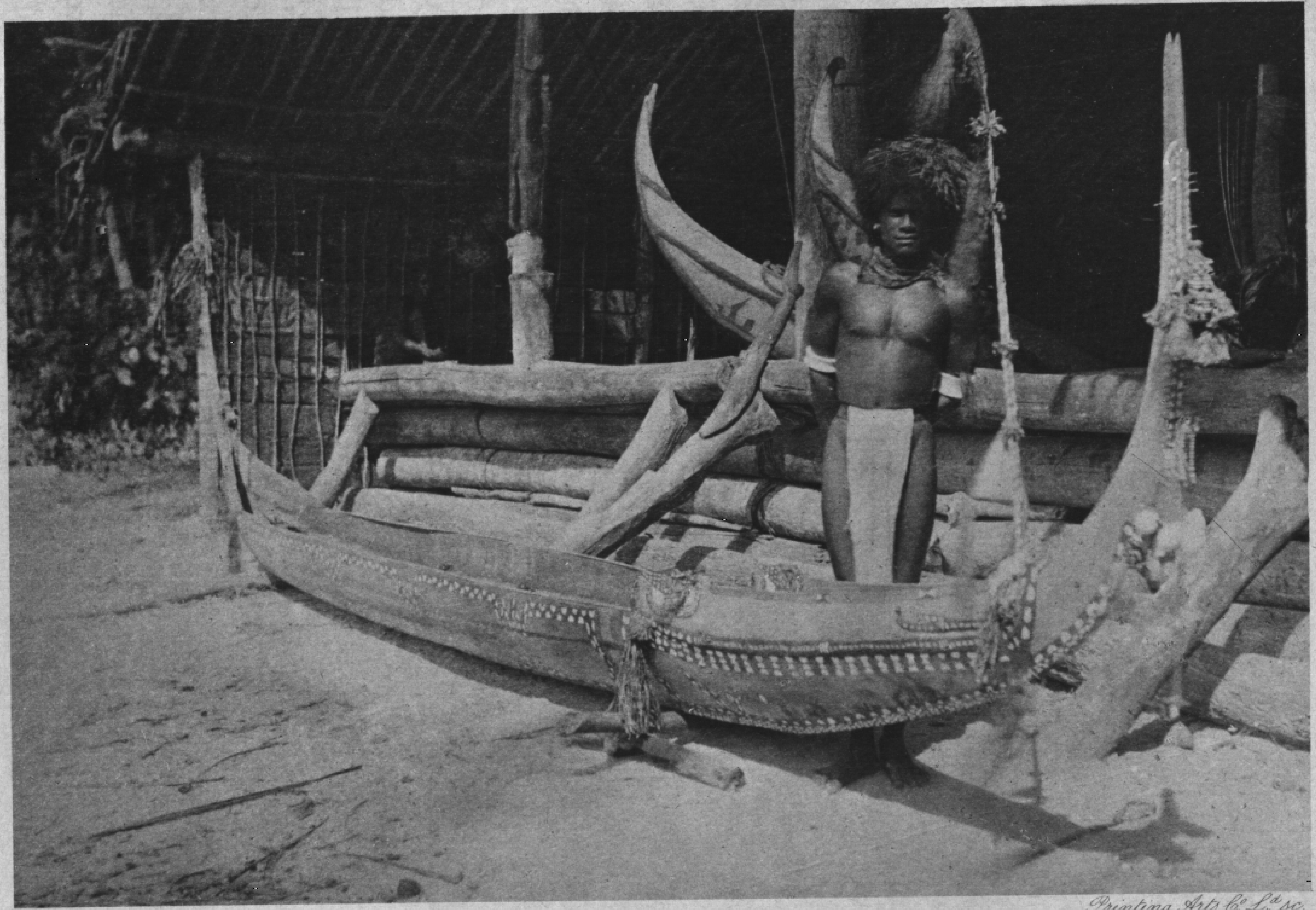
[1] Owaraha (Great Owa).

---

[1] The Spanish war-cry.

[2] Probably strips of dyed bark.

[3] The use of flint for spear-points has decayed.


Printing Arts Co. Ld. sc.

Canoe-house, Santa Ana.

wounded; and though no more Indians came out to join these in the fight, it appeared that many had remained in ambush, for, as our men followed in pursuit, they came out and fled. After this our men set fire to all their houses, and took water without their attacking them again, though they were looking on. The captain fought valiantly, though he was wounded, which encouraged his men greatly. When all this was over, they embarked at nine o'clock, and set sail with a fair wind to return to the ships, because they could not see any land beyond, although they diligently sought and looked for it. And this day they had a heavy sea and showers. The Chief Pilot would not put into any other harbour, in order to reach the ships quickly on account of the wounded. And when night fell, the weather looked threatening; and for fear lest they should strike upon some reef, they put into a creek, and seven or eight shield-bearers and ten arquebusiers landed at a village which was near, to see what was in it, but they found nothing, nor would the natives wait for them, though they called to them. They embarked, and set sail at midnight.

Next day, in the morning, when they were 4 or 5 leagues from the harbour, a canoe came out to them in which were four Indians, and, in order to take one of them, they fired in the air, and the Indians, in their fear, capsized the canoe, and took to swimming. They chased them with the brigantine, and two sailors, jumping into the water, captured three of them. From this harbour where the ships were to the end of the island is 30 leagues; and, since Hernando Gallego has marked it on the course in the chart, and named the harbours, I will say no more.

When the brigantine arrived the General and all rejoiced, though we were sorry to see the wounded and to hear that there was no more land. Order was at once given that on the next day, Thursday, the 15th of the same, the Master of the Camp, the Ensign-General, the captains, pilots and officers should assemble on board the *Capitana*, in order to despatch ourselves with speed, and to take instructions for the discovery of more lands before our provisions should be exhausted. And opinions were given that the ships should be careened, as they stood in great need of it, and that such food and water as were necessary should be taken in; that, when this had been done, we should go in search of more lands; and that, if there were none, nor any appearance of any, and if by chance we should get far out to sea, it would be well to be provided with everything, so that we might not in the future find ourselves in greater necessity than in the past; and so it was put at once into effect. And in order to remove the ships to a place where they would be sheltered from all winds, so that they might the more easily be put on their sides, the Master of the Camp and the Chief Pilot, with half a dozen arquebusiers, went to a creek which was very near, at a distance of half a league, to seek a harbour there. On arriving they found two villages, where they landed; and although the natives, when they saw them, sounded their drums, putting themselves under arms, they did not dare to await our men, but fled to the mountain. Our men did not find any food, for the natives had removed it. They took three or four hens, and with these they returned to the ships. Although they found a good harbour, the situation was much shut in and hot, for the winds did not enter it, and there was but little water. On returning they made this report, and it was not considered advisable to put ourselves into it, because some harm might happen to us, and because the sick, of whom many were convalescent, might fall sick again. And it was resolved to repair the ships where they were, which the pilots also thought would be well; and they immediately brought them nearer to land.

At daybreak, next day, Saturday, the 17th of July, the

General landed with all the company, leaving on board only the sailors who were to repair the ships, and all the chests and stuffs in them were brought on shore and placed in a large shed,[1] which held them very well. And all the men from the *Almiranta*, with the Master of the Camp and the stuffs, occupied another shed, which was also large, for in these parts they are better than those in Peru. And for the general safety, the Master of the Camp and Pedro Sarmiento resolved to set fire to some huts which were near those in which they had quartered themselves, so that, if the natives came, we might discover them, and fight them in the open field. And when they informed the General of this, he would not allow it, but, when the danger was pointed out to him, he bade them do what they thought necessary against the malice of the natives. Therefore, they immediately set fire to five huts, and when the natives saw this—for they kept constant watch upon some very high mountains which were in sight of this village—and saw that we were landing our property from the ships, they supposed that we were about to settle in their lands and houses. When it was growing late, many of them assembled and began to come down from the mountain, and their intentions seemed hostile, for they had on the bands which they usually wear in fighting. As soon as they were noticed, the alarm was sounded, so that our men might form up in order, for some of them had gone pigeon-shooting. And four of the eleven pieces of artillery were pointed towards the summit of the mountain, which they were descending. And as we were fixing them, a large canoe, in which there were many well-armed Indians, was seen coming round a point formed by the harbour. A gun was turned upon them and fired, and though they were far off, the ball went so close to them that, although they were going slowly, it made them hurry, and they fled, jumping into the sea[1] to get to the other side. The other guns were fired towards the mountain where we saw the Indians coming down. And as the balls reached the place where they were, and the report echoed loudly through the mountain, they all fled, and they never reached the place where we were. Thus the safety of the camp was assured. A strict watch was kept on that and every other night, but they never molested us all the time. And knowing that the Indians in the island might assemble and attack us, as they could have done had they all joined together, and that they might do us great harm, for we were few, we used great caution; but they do not join forces, every chief keeping to his own village and people. Nevertheless, we were on our guard against whatever might occur, and an order was issued that no soldier should leave the main body, or enter the bush to hunt, or for any other purpose, for fear lest the islanders should be in ambush and kill some of them. This was strictly enjoined upon them, for until now there had been disorder, and some had disregarded discipline in their eagerness for the chase. It was even ordered that no match should be given them except what might be needed in case of a skirmish with the natives, in order to prevent them from going to hunt, and thus avoid any disaster.

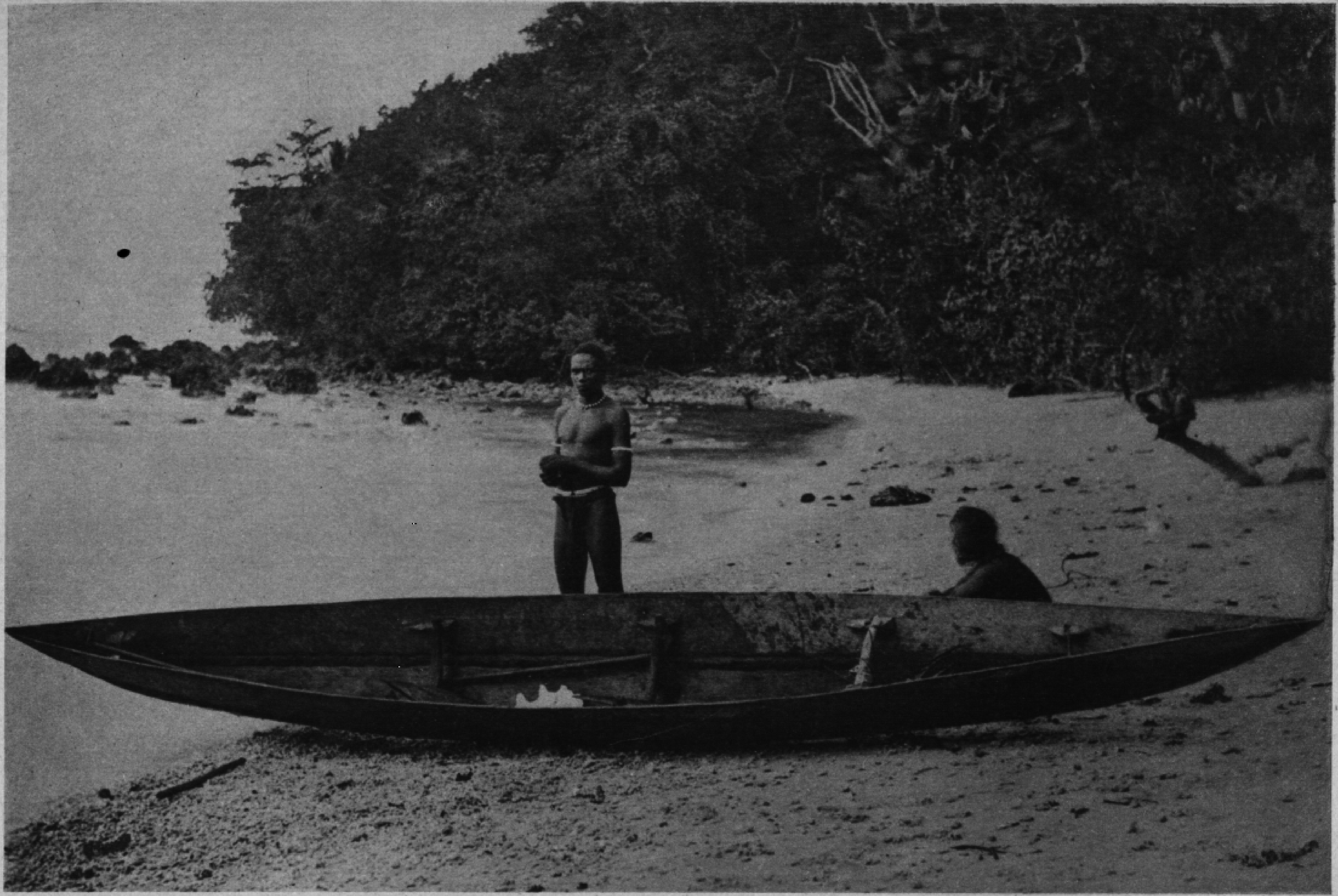
---

[1] Probably an *oka*, or a canoe-house.

On the following Monday, the 19th of the same, they began to repair the ships. The order above mentioned proved of no avail; for some of the soldiers, when they saw that the Indians did not appear, went out to shoot pigeons, cut palmettoes, and look for a well-flavoured fruit which grew in that part. And it happened that on the feast of Santa Ana, the 26th of the same, two hours after daybreak, while we were all hearing Mass, a soldier left the camp, taking a half-breed with him, and went to some distance from the camp and houses to cut a palmetto; and though there were some nearer, and in a place where they were safe from the natives and could be succoured, their evil fortune made them seek it far away in the bush, where they met with a great disaster. It happened that the islanders of the village watched from the heights every day, observing all our movements; and they saw that some of our men strayed out of bounds at times and entered the bush alone; and this day they repaired to the place most frequented by them, a tree, to which the soldiers and others often went to gather up the fruit which fell from it, and which was like the peach, and had the same taste. And the savages were in ambush at this spot, to surprise and rob our men, as they knew how to do with great cunning, having the patience to await their opportunity, the said soldier with the half-breed being busied, as I have said, in cutting the palmetto near the said tree. Just as the soldier had untied his points, and had gone apart, about a dozen Indians came out upon them, and approached very quietly with their darts and lances; and seeing them coming, the soldier began to adjust his dress, but the Indians hurled darts at him so quickly, that to his misfortune he had no time to adjust himself, or take up his shield, having his sword in one hand and holding up his hose with the other. The half-breed had fled towards the camp to give the alarm, and finding himself alone, and unable to fight, he also took to flight; but he was impeded by his falling hose, and the savages pursued him so hotly, that, though he ran a short distance, they overtook him and wounded him, hurling a dart which struck him in the back and pierced his breast, so that he fell. On seeing this, the men in the ships shouted loudly to give the alarm, and all rushed out. Then the half-breed came up, wounded in the loins by a dart, which the Indians had hurled after him in his flight; but, as it was a glance shot, the wound was slight. He reported that the soldier was left behind among the savages, who were killing him, and described where he was; and they hastened thither, all too late, for he was mortally wounded. The General seeing this, and noticing that Captain Sarmiento had come thither with some negroes, called a halt, ordering that all should not desert the camp, where a friar was saying Mass, lest the savages might go thither and do some mischief, for the artillery could not be brought into play. All approved of this, and Captain Sarmiento went forward with his sword, some following him and some remaining to guard the camp. When they arrived they found the Indians fled, and the poor wretch upon his knees on the shore, dead and covered with many fearful wounds. For, according to those in the ship who saw it, every Indian gave him a thrust, so that he was pierced through and through, and his skull was split to the brain with the blow of a club. And the savages threatened them from the mountain, making a great clamour. We were all deeply grieved to see him so wounded, and not to be able to avenge his death at once, for he died as we came up. After this we all retreated, to see whether the islanders were so numerous that they would dare to come out of the bush to attack us, for while they were in it we could not harm them. They began to shout, but did not dare to come out; and, seeing this, the General ordered Pedro Sarmiento to go with six shield-bearers and several arquebusiers to the place where we could hear that they were; and if the savages came out to attack them, to retreat towards the camp, so that; seeing him fly, they might attack him, and if they followed him in pursuit we could give them a volley of artillery. But though he went close to them, and the savages shouted, they would not come. And in order to drive them from their cover, two pieces of heavy artillery were discharged at the spot where they were heard; and though the intention of our men—to go and avenge the death of our comrade—was good, the General would not suffer it, for the mountain where the Indians were was very rugged and thickly wooded, and it was impossible for our men to overtake them, since they run like deer, and our men might lose themselves. Then they set fire to all the huts in the village, so that should any come to attack them, they might find no shelter. Only the two large sheds, in which we were quartered, were left standing. This soldier was named Juan Gomez—formerly a servant of your Lordship. The General reprimanded the soldiers, asking why they had disobeyed his orders; and he said that if it came to his knowledge that any did so in future, he would have them hanged or stabbed, if they were found outside the camp. After this no one dared to go a step out of bounds, as was very necessary; for, besides that we were few and ought to keep together in case of emergencies, if any strayed apart it always ended in disaster, and we could not succour one another. That day a piece of artillery was fired to frighten the savages who were going about the mountain, and the charge burst near the touch-hole, but did no damage whatever. That night the order was given for the boats to be got ready and well equipped, to give chase to a large canoe, for several canoes, carrying many Indians, were crossing from one point of the harbour to another; and it had happened before that when the brigantine or a boat pursued a rowing canoe from the place where they came out, and the arquebusiers fired and pursued them, the natives in their fear abandoned the canoe and threw themselves into the sea, as aforesaid; and thus it might be possible to inflict some punishment upon them. And the next day, in the morning, as we were watching to see whether any would appear, we saw three or four canoes come out. At this time Pedro Xuarez, captain of artillery, who was waiting in the ships with four arquebusiers, had been ordered, if he saw any come out, to go forward and bar their passage; and Gravyel Muñez, with as many others, was waiting to do the same; and they embarked in furious haste, the one to intercept and the other to pursue them. When the islanders saw our men come out, they began to row furiously, their canoes throwing the water into the air. And as they started rather far off, and not within arquebus range, the savages gained considerably, and though pursued for nearly a league, they gained every moment, so that it was impossible to come up with them. And it is certain that, unless they are within arquebus range, there is no galley with oars and sails that can overtake them, for the speed of their rowing is marvellous. And when they saw that it was impossible to overtake them, our men returned. As the islanders upon the mountain had seen them go, they thought that there would be but few in the camp, and that they could attempt something, and they were also encouraged by seeing the death of the soldier the day before; therefore they came down from the mountain, and all lay in the bush near the place where we fetched water, and there they were discovered by two dogs. At this time a few arquebusiers were keeping guard while water was being brought, and as it began to rain heavily and they could not use the arquebuses, the order was given to return to the camp, where we assembled, watching the savages fighting with the dogs. And they did it in the following manner: a savage would come out, throw a dart at the dogs, and fly back with the dogs behind him, and others were ready, and threw many darts at them, while we stood still, thinking that the savages would be enticed by them, and come into the open, and that then we would give them a good volley with the artillery and arquebuses. Therefore the order was given for all to retreat into the

---

[1] Or "put out to sea.'



Printing Arts C.o L.d 90.

Small Canoe (Guadalcanar)

sheds, the whole business and contest lying between the Indians and the dogs, and it was wonderful to hear the tumult they made. Then we called off the dogs and tied them up, and this being done the Indians would not come out, but retreated up the mountain. They were all covered with broad leaves, so that in some cases it was impossible to see whether there was an Indian among the green branches, if they had not moved about. It is certain that they attack furiously . . . .[1] if they were but well armed. The Indians who appeared that day numbered about one hundred.

As it was in every way desirable to chastise these barbarians, for killing the soldier, and in order to frighten them so that they would not dare to molest us, the General ordered Captain Sarmiento, with six arquebusiers and four shield-bearers, to go that night and lie in ambush in a hut which was within two arquebus shots, where the Indians were wont to come every morning, and near the place where they had killed the soldier. And he sent Gaspar de Colmenates, with as many others, to another hut near by, which they also frequented. They went thither after the morning watch was set, firmly determined if the savages came within reach, to avenge the death of their comrade. When both parties had reached their posts, keeping their matches covered to avoid being seen, they entered the huts secretly so that they could not be perceived, and remained there till daybreak and for four hours after, without seeing any islander. Then the General, thinking that it was time for them to return, ordered the recall to be sounded, and they came back at once, and when they arrived, the natives had come down from the mountain to the place where we had heard them shouting the day before. And as several arquebusiers went out against them, to see whether they could catch sight of one and fire at him, not one appeared, and they went back up the mountain without our men being able to do them any harm. And the next day they again came down to the watering place to do the same as before, and became so insolent that every one of these three days they came to stand and watch us, though they dared not come into the open for fear of the artillery and arquebuses. That day a gun was fired at a canoe of Indians which passed near the harbour, and, though it was far away, the ball went so near that it sent a great splash of water into the canoe, and the ball rebounded over the heads of the Indians to the other side; and upon this they were so frightened that they fled frantically out to sea. And though the savages came down on each of these three days, they did not molest us, and we kept good sentinels, firing several arquebuses at every watch.

---

[1] Here there appears to be some omission.

I have described above how everyone landed for the repairing of the ships, and quartered themselves in a village, and what occurred with the natives. And some of the soldiers, when they saw that the General intended to send the brigantine on a voyage of discovery, were much displeased because we did not return to Peru, as they greatly desired; and they inquired ceaselessly whether the General intended to settle in this land, and discussed it among themselves. And there did not lack some who said that a representation should be made to the General, and that he expected no less, and they earnestly strove to bring it about. Thereupon they assembled and made a representation to the General, saying that we ought to settle, that it might be supposed that such was their desire. The General replied that he understood their design, and if they desired to settle, they might set about it before leaving that port, and he would send a report thereof to His Majesty. And if such was their desire there was no need of petitions, for the general wish would be followed, since it was his will to conform to it, though his own wish and opinion was to go and discover more lands; and he would only settle in that land, or in another smaller one, or on the sea-coast, if it was their will. Upon this they did not persist in their demand; on the contrary most of them wished to set out at once. And the majority repeated that they did not wish to settle, and a few said that the General wished to take them where they would all be drowned, because he said that he wished to go to a higher latitude to discover more land, or make certain that there was none; and if they found any he would report it to His Majesty, and the matter would be settled, so that His Majesty would be put to no further expense in sending to discover it. But the soldiers were very sorry for this, and were afraid, because in the latitude of 11 degrees we had experienced the aforesaid storm.

By this time the repairing of the ships was nearly finished, and the desire was to set out promptly in search of land, since Hernando Gallego had not found any with the brigantine, and had said that the said islands were, in his opinion, the last of that archipelago. And as there was only contrary weather for steering south-east, which was the most proper course, the General endeavoured to keep the people occupied until the weather should be favourable, for it was expected that a change would come with the approaching Equinox, and we should go out with the settled weather to gain the latitude which it was desirable we should reach to give His Majesty a true account. Thereupon he resolved to send the brigantine in quest of more provisions such as the natives had, in order to spare ours for our navigation. He communicated this design to the Master of the Camp and the pilots, but they pressed him to put out, saying that the weather was favourable for the purpose, and that it was better to await a fair wind at sea than on shore. Seeing this, the General resolved to ask the opinion of the soldiers, pilots, and captains upon this point, and also upon whether we should settle or not. Therefore it was appointed that all should assemble on Saturday, the 7th of August; and they did so, and he made them a speech, saying that they knew that he had sent the brigantine from this port to discover lands, and none had been seen; that he was resolved to go up to the latitude of 20 or 22 degrees, 150 leagues, where it was understood that there was land, and they must labour and expose themselves to every danger until they found it. And that he was informed, and knew for certain, that there was provision of roots and biscuit in the ships for five months, and he put it to them whether it could be done with this provision, or whether it would be better, before leaving this port, to send the brigantine for more, bidding them give their opinion thereupon. He also put it to them whether, if, after setting out in search of land, and reaching the latitude where it was said to be, which was about 150 leagues from thence, they should find none, they thought that it would be befitting the service of Our Lord God and His Majesty, and the general good, to return to the Islands of Guadalcanal, or Buena Vista, or Treguada, the best of those they had discovered, and settle on one of them. And he bade them weigh it well, and resolve upon it, each one giving his opinion for himself. And each one did so, the Chief Pilot first. Touching the question of first putting out from port in search of provisions, he said that the ships were getting worn with the long voyage, and the tackle likewise, and that, though repaired, they were still leaky, and therefore it was not fitting to go and fetch more provisions; also that all the island had heard of us, and we had seen that the natives had hidden their provisions, and that if we went to other islands in search of them, a long time would be spent in coming and going; and in the meantime those left in the ships would consume more than the brigantine would bring back. Moreover, that he considered the provisions that we had were sufficient for going and returning from the reported land, or for reaching some other, where we could provide ourselves therewith ; and such was his opinion. And with respect to settling, he had no opinion on the subject. And to this all the other pilots deferred.

Then all the soldiers gave their opinion, and with regard to fetching provisions they all conformed to the opinion of Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot. And with regard to settling, each one gave his opinion in turn, that though this land was very good, and there was supposed to be gold in it, and good might be done there, both in intercourse with the natives and other things, it was not advisable to settle there at present, because we were few, and there were many sick, and there was great lack of ammunition, and many arquebuses were damaged and could not be used, and the natives were numerous and very warlike, and the land extensive and very far from Peru, from whence succour could not come as speedily as would be necessary. And therefore it was fitting that we should go and report to His Majesty, and not remain in this land; and thereupon His Majesty, having been made acquainted with everything, could act according to his pleasure. But, in spite of all, there were some who said that if the General wished to settle, it should be done. The Master of the Camp and the clergy were of opinion that to settle at present would be rather to the disservice than to the service of His Majesty for the reasons aforesaid ; since, if it pleased him to make a settlement, nothing was lost but the time required for sending people for the purpose, for those who could settle at present could do no good, nor achieve any result ; on the contrary, it was to be supposed that by the time succour arrived we should all have perished at the hands of the savages, and this would be of no service to His Majesty.

Then the General, seeing that all were of the same opinion, and that the pilots said that a [fair] wind should be awaited at sea, said that he had left Peru with the intention of settling in this land, and was now willing to do so; and since only one was of opinion that it was advisable to settle, conforming to the general opinion, he thought that we should go forward to 20 and 22 degrees in quest of the land which, as your Lordship had been informed, lay within from 700 to 1,000 leagues or more from this kingdom of Peru, in the latitude of 15 degrees, to see whether it was there. For as to Cabo de la Cruz, which Pedro Sarmiento informed your Lordship was 1,200 leagues from this kingdom in 8 degrees south latitude, with a long stretch of coast extending for 500 leagues and more in the latitude of 1 to 8 degrees, though we had navigated 1,500 leagues, and 1,000 from east to west in a lower latitude than 8 degrees, we had not seen it, nor found it to be so. For the island of Santa Ysabel, which lies in 8 degrees more or less, was sailed round by the brigantine, with the Chief Pilot and the Master of the Camp on board, and the Chief Pilot had said that according to the latitude and course which they had followed, and in which it lies, it is little more than 200 leagues in circumference. And the other islands discovered afterwards lie further to the east of it in a higher latitude. And in order to obtain clear information of all for His Majesty, that he might be put to no further expense in sending to discover it, we determined, as has been said, to continue the voyage by the course which had been kept from the island of Guadalcanal, and which is south-east and east-south-east, Our Lord giving fair weather for it; and that, if a rich land should be found, we should do as Our Lord should enlighten us to be best for His holy service and that of His Majesty, and the profit and honour of all.

And the pilots were immediately ordered to get the ships ready with all speed, and to prepare them so as to leave the harbour by the said course in quest of land; and the order was given to embark the artillery and chests and other things necessary, which was done.

Next Sunday, which was the 8th of August (for we were twenty-two days in this port), after having heard Mass, and having all communicated, we embarked, with the determination to set sail the following day; but because the wind was a very strong breeze, such as is always prevalent on this coast, and was very much against us, we could not do so. And Don Hernando landed with men and a body-guard, to defend the sailors while they took in water and wood. And when they had come back to the ships, the General determined to send to a creek which was near the harbour, in order that, in a village which was there, two pairs of Indians might be seized for interpreters and taken to Peru, because our Indians had fled in this island. And for this purpose he ordered Gravyel Muñez with twelve arquebusiers and twelve shield-bearers and some negro servants to go thither, charging them to seize them with all diligence, but not to kill or wound any, but to accomplish the task with as little hurt to them as was possible.

Gravyel Muñez set out to do this in two boats with the men, taking with him the Chief Pilot. They started on Monday, the 9th of the same, just as the morning watch was set. Most of the soldiers were ignorant of their design, and did not know what orders had been given them. He made them a speech upon the way, explaining the business in hand and how they were to set about it, calling upon them to use their best efforts to assist him; and they all promised to do so. Then they proceeded on their way and entered the bay, and, that they might not be perceived, they went in close to the shore a long time before they reached the natives' village. And it seemed to them that it would be as well to disembark and go up to a hut, which had been seen the day before upon a hill, near a *chacara*, where they thought that there would be Indians, to take them, and then to go along the shore and the water's edge; for if they went with the boats they could not fail to be seen, because the moon was shining very brightly. They landed, and began to seek a path up the hill where the hut was, but none could be found, because it was thickly wooded.

And leaving the boats there, and having arranged with Hernando Gallego that he should come for them at a certain time, they began to march along the shore towards the village; and on reaching some reefs on a very bad and dangerous road, one of the soldiers fell from off a rock into the sea, and wetted his arquebus and all his ammunition; and he would have found himself in trouble if a wave had not cast him ashore. They passed a point, and at the end of it they saw some palm-trees. They went in among them, and found a hut, poor and small. Gravyel Muñez gave orders to approach it, but when they had done so they found no Indian in it. They went up a little higher and there seemed to be another, but it was an oratory. A little further on they found a continuous road, which appeared to go up the hill where stood the hut aforesaid, and they judged that there was a large population. They followed it with great difficulty because the ascent was very rugged, Gravyel Muñez leading the vanguard with all the rest formed in order. They reached the huts, and found the enclosure very thick-set, so that they could not enter until they had removed some boughs and stakes (*maderos*), in fear of being discovered. And so they entered a plantation of reeds which was within the enclosure. Gravyel Muñez ordered them to crowd round the huts, which were very close together, and when this was done he ordered them to cry "Santiago!" And as they began to make a noise and discharge arquebuses, the Indians who were within took the alarm and began to make a noise, hastily seizing their arms, and doing their utmost to get out; but when they got to the doors they were stopped by our men; and while they were capturing the Indians in the hut where they supposed that there were most, those in another hut were secured and could not move. Gravyel Muñez set guards at the door, and he and the rest of the shield-bearers attacked the other; and the natives defended the entrance with great courage, and, in their efforts to escape, as the hut was such that it could be broken through anywhere, four or five got out. And as Gravyel Muñez rushed to prevent them, they gave him a thrust with a lance and wounded him in the eyebrow; but it pleased God that the wound should be slight, and that his eye should escape, and in spite of all he managed to stop them.

At this time another soldier was wounded by a lance-thrust in the face, but also slightly, and a negro was wounded by an arrow in the thigh. The Indians struggled so to defend themselves and escape that, as our men did not wish to kill or wound them, it was impossible to capture them. For, getting out of the hut by breaking through it in many parts, they rushed headlong through a thicket down the mountain, where, if any of our men had gone after them they would have been killed or badly injured. There was one Indian who brought out his wife or daughter by the hand, to save her, and he came out so precipitately pulling her after him that she fell; and, though the shield-bearers attacked him, he would not leave go of her, but dragged her down the mountain with great courage and speed. Three or four Indians and several women fled in this manner without their being able to capture them. They took in that hut two women, whom Gravyel Muñez ordered to be set at liberty, and they immediately fled into the woods. Then they attacked the other hut, and in order to see what was in it, they placed two torches in front of it, which they had not done in the other case because they could not get them to ignite. They saw that there was only one Indian inside it, who looked very fierce with a lance in his hand, the wound of which would have been dangerous, for it was made with barbs. And when the Indian saw that the shield-bearers intended to enter, he defended himself valiantly in the following manner (for the hut had two doors, one in front and one at the back), and when he saw that the shield-bearers wished to enter, he defended himself valiantly in the following manner;[1] he went from one to the other with great alacrity and speed, so that he defended the entrances against them well, and made our men desist and draw back five or six times, thrusting at them with his lance. It is true that the doors were no larger than a small window, which a man could just pass through and that with difficulty, for so they make them in these parts. And in order to see whether giving them food would induce our men to leave him alone, the Indian took three or four baskets of almonds and cocoanuts, and threw them to them. Then Gravyel Muñez told him in his own language to be quiet, for he meant him no harm. But it was of no avail, for he would not trust them and defended himself against them with great courage. It was a thing to marvel at that one Indian alone should so defend himself; for it seems that there is not a nation on earth but, on being surprised and surrounded as our men did to these and this Indian—I will not say one alone, but even if they were many—would have surrendered without resistance. This was supposed to be because these Indians know nothing of surrender, and fight to the death; either because they are valiant, or because they eat each other; and, thinking that we would eat them, he defended himself with such courage.

---

[1] This repetition occurs in the original.

Then Gravyel Muñez, seeing that they could by no means enter, ordered the front of the hut to be pulled down; and when this was done the savage had so enraged them, that first a soldier and a sailor attacked him, and then the said Gravyel Muñez and the shield-bearers, who covered themselves so well that, though the Indian directed many lance thrusts at them, he wounded no one. They closed with him, and bound him, but with great difficulty, for he struggled fiercely to prevent it. They also found three women in the hut; an old woman, a girl, and another woman with a new-born child. They captured them all, and, taking them out of the hut, they let the old one go free. She held the one who carried the infant fast by the hand, dragging her that they might not take her away. They understood that she was her mother. Then Gravyel Muñez ordered the other two women to be set free. When the Indian who was bound perceived it, and heard his wife speaking at the other side of the hut, and saw that they had taken her prisoner and intended to bring her also, he asked that she might be brought to him. And he made signs to Gravyel Muñez very earnestly, giving him to understand that she should be taken with him, and showing great grief at going without her; and it was understood that she was his wife, and the child his son, and the girl his wife's sister. And thereupon they brought them along with the Indian. They went down again by the way they came, and found the boats waiting; and Gravyel Muñez and Hernando Gallego thought that the Indians of the village must have fled to the mountain at the sound of the arquebuses, because Hernando Gallego had seen a canoe come out close to the village.

They resolved to return to the ships, where they arrived before morning, and Gravyel Muñez made this report, and told how he had brought the women upon the entreaty of the Indian. The General wished that he had not brought the Indian women, and would have set them free, if several persons had not prevented him, saying that, since she was the Indian's wife, he ought not to be parted from her. Thereupon the General decided that they should remain, and ordered shirts to be given to the women to cover their nakedness, for they wore very short bands, like fringe, which did not cover them properly. And he ordered linen to be given them for the child, for they were nursing it without any covering whatever; and a loin-cloth, such as they wear, to the Indian, for he was stark-naked. And he gave orders that they should be on deck during the day and below at night, and that the hatchway should be locked and the key given to the father, Fray Francisco de Galvez. It was given to him for two nights and no more, for he could trust the Spaniards, who were all good and chaste, and a watch was kept upon the negroes and servants, who were also chaste. And when the Indians saw the good treatment which they received, they showed no sign of sadness, and laughed with everyone.

We saw that this island contained the things which I have already described, and which were in the others, and that the people were all similar and had the same customs, except that those of San Christoval go stark-naked.

Next day, Wednesday, which was the 11th of August, in the year 1568, before daybreak, or it might be about midnight, we set sail, and quitted the Puerto de Nuestra Señora in the Island of San Christoval, where we had been anchored, repairing the ships and taking in supplies of food and water for our sustenance, forty-one days, as with all the good speed which we made we could not get out before. Then, as the wind on that coast was always the same, very strong and dead against us, so that some nights we were obliged to lie in a cross sea, we were seven days in coasting along the whole island with great difficulty, the distance being 30 leagues. It pleased Our Lord on Thursday, the 17th of the same, at four o'clock in the afternoon, after it had been calm, to give us a wind, with which before night we doubled the cape and end of the island of San Christoval, and the two islands of Santa Ana and Santa Catalina, which are two leagues from it; and the wind was so strong that we could only carry the courses all night. And when day broke, we had gone so far that we had lost sight of them.

The day before we doubled the cape we had parted from the brigantine, because every now and then the wind and sea grew stormy for the ship, and in case of some mischance, lest she should be dashed against us, we consulted with Hernando Gallego to see what could be done, and, upon the advice of all, he bade us to cut her adrift in order to avoid worse evil; and so it was done.

The next day we had a strong south-east wind with showers, by which the main-yard was broken and the sail all torn in many places from top to bottom, so that it was of no use. We repaired the yard that day as best we could, and lay in a cross sea all that day and night, for there were heavy showers and the wind was very strong.

The following Thursday, which was the 19th of August, as the wind was still strong, we sailed under courses.

The following Friday, at daybreak, we could not see the *Almiranta*, which grieved us very much. After a good while we saw her at a distance, and waited for her; they said that a set of tackle had broken, and therefore they had remained behind. At this time the wind was so contrary that we could not follow the desired course, which was south-east. Hernando Gallego steered east-north-east, saying that we could by no means follow another tack with advantage. And when the General saw it, and that we were falling down towards the Equinoctial line, and had tacked several times to prevent it, and had nevertheless fallen from 11 to 5 degrees, and that if we continued on this course we must necessarily cross the Line in six days, and, having done so, that we would not be able to regain the desired latitude to seek the land, and would be forced by the contrary wind we usually had to go to New Spain, it seemed to him that it would be better to steer south-east: in the first place because the voyage would be shorter, and in the second to see whether by increasing the latitude we could find land. He told Hernando Gallego to to steer upon the other tack, to bear up for it. He replied that it was not proper, and when the General insisted that he should do so, he complained openly to the soldiers and to all that he was not suffered to pursue his navigation as he thought fit and as was best for all, and that he [the General] wished us to go to where we would all be lost. And they all asked him why he did not say so to the General, and request him in writing not to follow that course, stating the reasons and giving his opinion. He bade the soldiers make the request, since their lives were also at stake. They replied that they did not understand the matter, though they wished to obey the General.

And while Hernando Gallego followed that course unwillingly, he kept on saying that if we continued in it we should be lost, and that it was impossible that it should be otherwise except Our Lord miraculously delivered us, unless we followed the other course and crossed the Line. And the sailors, hearing him and seeing that we were going south-east, were discontented, and did not manage the sails as well as was necessary; and when the General reprimanded them, they said that they had no strength to do it, and could do no more; that he well knew that six or seven sailors and negroes had died, and others were sick and could not work; that they were few; and that, besides this, their rations were short and unsustaining; and therefore, that they could not manage the sails if we went to a higher latitude on account of the tempests we might expect to meet there, and that it would be laying great hardships on them, and they would all die; that if they could not do it now in fair weather, much less would they be able to do it in storms; and that he should order more rations to be given them than they had then, saying that the eleven ounces of bread which every man received each day was not enough to enable them to stand upon their legs, much less to work. The General encouraged them, bidding them try to work, and he would order their rations to be increased and would give them wine that they might recover their strength, and then they would be able to work. And he told them and Hernando Gallego that they must not cross the Line on any account, and he would rather expose himself to every danger in the world. When Hernando Gallego heard this, and found the General so determined in his resolve, he waited till the *Almiranta* came up close; and then the Master of the Camp, who was on board, asked Hernando Gallego what course he had resolved upon, and he replied that he was acting upon the command of the General, and that this was not the proper course.

Then he asked the pilots of that ship their opinion concerning this navigation, and told them that he had been constrained to follow this course, and that they must not think that he did it of his own will, for he considered it madness. And after the four pilots had consulted together, and had all formed the same opinion without disagreeing upon any point whatever, they conformed to the advice of Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot; and all presented to the General a petition and representation of which the contents, tenour, opinions and testimony, signed with their names, Captain Sarmiento's and mine, are as follows:—

Opinions and testimony of the Pilots in the Capitana *of this Fleet, navigating in the region of the Equinoctial Line, Saturday, the 4th of September, in the year of the birth of Our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ, 1568; laid before the Illustrious Señor Mendaña, Governor and Captain-General for His Majesty of the men and ships of the Fleet and the unknown lands of this new voyage of discovery in the South Sea. Hernando Gallego, Chief Pilot, and Juan Manriquez, pilot of this ship, the* Capitana, *appeared and presented a petition followed by certain depositions, the tenour of which is as follows:*

ILLUSTRIOUS SIR,

Hernando Gallego, Chief Pilot, Juan Enriquez Pedro Rs. (Rodriguez), and Grego. Gonçalez, pilots of this royal fleet, lay before you that Your Worship has commanded us in the navigation and voyage which we are now making in the direction of Peru, in quest of this new discovery, to steer and make our way from the east [west] towards the south-east and south-south-east, and not to do otherwise so long as it be possible. This course we have endeavoured to follow during these fifteen days since we left the island of San Christoval with the ships, and the violence of the contrary winds we have had and the heavy showers have made it impossible to advance upon the said courses; on the contrary, we have fallen down to 5 degrees and 4 degrees, where we now are; and though we have attempted and endeavoured many times, as Your Worship knows and has seen, to return and advance to the south-east and south-south-east, yet upon these courses neither can Your Worship make any way with the said ships, nor can we make the discovery which Your Worship intends; on the contrary, by pursuing the said courses total and certain destruction must ensue to Your Worship and all those who are with Your Worship in this fleet, for the following reasons and causes.

In the first place, because Your Worship has seen with your own eyes that the winds which have prevailed and prevail continuously since Your Worship left the island of San Christoval, and for many days and months in this south sea, are east-north-east and east, and south-east and south-south-east, and these must be the prevailing winds, and with these Your Worship cannot pursue the upward course, as Your Worship has commanded us; neither is it possible.

Also because, even should the winds and weather allow of our steering to the east and south-south-east in the regions where Your Worship now is, we ought not and cannot pursue the said navigation; for on none of these courses can Your Worship reach any land of Peru, nor even the Straits of Magellan, but only lands and courses beyond; a region already reached by men, and where no land is known. And by entering such a vast gulf, leaving behind and departing from every known land and course, it might easily happen, should the sea-breezes usual in such a vast gulf prevail there, that you may enter and get into some region from whence you cannot return, and Your Worship and the ships may be lost, and not a soul escape to report to His Majesty the service done upon this voyage of discovery, by which a great disservice will be done to him. And those opinions which we gave Your Worship in the island of San Christoval, that if it were possible to steer south-east we should pursue that course, have no bearing on the present case; for now Your Worship is in another latitude and region, with different weather and courses, and therefore opinions differ also.

Likewise, being in the region where we now are, it is very necessary and fitting for Your Worship, and all those under your charge, to pursue your course in the direction permitted by the winds which now prevail, which is to cross the Line to the north-east, north-north-east, and north, in quest of land, so as to cross as speedily as possible the wide sea and gulf in which it lies, because the ships are damaged by the long voyage; and if Your Worship persists in wasting the present weather, any moderately bad weather will render them quite useless, and it will be impossible to navigate in them. Your Worship knows and has seen with your own eyes that in fair weather, after we left the land, they were found wanting, and the main yard and sail, mizzen, main cable and other tackle and cordage broke; so that if we do not speedily seek succour and remedy, for want thereof it may easily be that your Worship will not be able to navigate in them, and we must all necessarily perish.

Also, if Your Worship had to perform this long voyage tacking in different directions with the winds which change with every shower, it would result in your remaining stationary, for what you gain on one tack you lose upon the other, as has hitherto proved to be the case, in endeavouring to follow Your Worship's order. And, as Your Worship knows, the ships are very short of provisions for our sustenance, and there is a great lack of water because of the many barrels which have been broken or worn out on this long voyage. So that should Your Worship delay, and waste the favourable weather, we must certainly in a short time be in all these extremities, and any one of them must inevitably imperil Your Worship, and all the men in the said ships. And it is of little use for Your Worship to wish to return to 15 and 20 degrees south latitude in quest of the land of which information was received in Peru; for, as Your Worship is aware, since we left the city we have sought it, and reaching the latitude of 15 and

15¾ degrees, we sailed upon that course from 500 to 800 leagues, so that we all perceived that no such land was to be found there, nor can there be any doubt upon the subject. And it would be greater disservice to His Majesty to expose all this fleet to such risk as we have stated, than it would be service to him to endeavour to clear up the doubt, especially after what we have so clearly seen with our own eyes. And what is more, by what Your Worship has accomplished in this voyage of discovery you have amply fulfilled what His Majesty charged and commanded you to accomplish, since you have crossed so vast a gulf and sea, and reached and discovered many lands and races so unknown and remote from all men of our nation, that they were never seen or heard of by them. And by Your Worship going to some part where you may report all this to him, bringing your ships and men in safety, as you will by the help of Our Lord, His Majesty will think himself well served by what Your Worship has done and discovered.

Therefore we beg and beseech Your Worship, and, if necessary, call upon you, speaking with all due respect, once, twice, and thrice, and as many times as we are in duty bound, to order us to pursue and follow our journey in the direction and upon the course by which it may be most quickly accomplished, which is that above stated, so that Your Worship and all the people of this fleet may find safety; and that you will not permit us to keep tacking from side to side in so vast a gulf, wasting the wind, for that which now prevails may easily fail us, and leave Your Worship in it without being able to get out, until we all perish. And by going Your Worship will serve Our Lord and His Majesty, whereas to do the contrary is knowingly to tempt God. And of what we have above asked, requested, and beseeched Your Worship, let the notary and secretary draw up a deed in testimony, that it may bear witness and for ever testify to His Majesty of what we have expressed as our opinions.

In witness whereof, &c.

H^{RDO} GALLEGO.
JUAN ENRIQUEZ.

Captain Pedro Sarmiento de Ganboá [Gamboa] said that his opinion was in consideration of what had been said upon the matter . . . . . .[1] of the regions in which we were and the winds and courses, that we ought to steer and make our way towards the north and north-north-east, approaching and making for the nearest land, and take advantage of it because of the danger to the people and ships. And he signed it with his name on the 4th of September, being near the Equinoctial Line, "Pedro Sarmiento."

In the ship *Capitana* of this fleet, called *Los Reyes*, navigating in 4½ degrees south of the Equinoctial Line, on Friday, the 27th of the month of August, 1568, the ship named *Todos Santos*, *Almiranta* of this fleet, navigating in the same position at a little distance from her, Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, in the presence of the Illustrious Señor Alvaro de Mendaña, of me, the Purser, and of many other persons, gentlemen and soldiers of both ships, said, consulting aloud with Pedro Rodriguez and Gregorio Gonçalez, pilots of the said *Almiranta*, that they well knew and saw that, with the winds which prevailed and had prevailed since we left the islands, we could not navigate and follow the course which the General had commanded us to follow, which was from east to south-east and south-south-east, because the wind was very variable and was not fixed in any quarter which enabled us to navigate, except in the direction of north-east and north-north-east. And that they could well perceive that, if we tried to go in the other direction towards the south, we should be lost, and that it was not possible so to navigate. And that he had many times implored the said General to allow him to pursue the voyage upon the course best befitting the service of His Majesty and the good of the whole fleet, making the best possible use of the wind; and that he wished to ask and require of His Worship in writing that he would do so, and allow him to follow the said navigation, that it might appear that he had so spoken and published and requested it. And therefore, he bade them consider what they thought of it, and say and declare the same in writing and by word of mouth, that it might thus be in evidence when necessary.

---

[1] Illegible.

Then the said Pedro Rodriguez, pilot of the said ship, the *Almiranta*, said that it seemed to him that it was not fitting to follow the course and direction of south-east and south-south-east, but rather that of the north-east in quest of the nearest land, both because of the lack of provisions and of cordage and many other things in the ship, and of the many sick that there were. And therefore he bade him make and draw up the said petition and representation to the said General, and whatever he said therein he himself would likewise say and petition, and he bade him send it to him when it was ready, and he would sign it.

The said Gregorio Gonçalez, pilot of the said ship, said that he agreed with what the said Pedro Rodriguez, pilot, had said and requested, for such was his opinion.

Juan Henriquez, pilot of this ship, the *Capitana*, said that his opinion was the same as that of Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, and he asked and entreated the said General to the same purpose, and he would sign the said petition and representation to the said General when it was given to him in writing—Gaspar de Colmenates, Don Hernando

Henriquez, Gravyel Muñez and Otos Catoria (*sic*)[1] being in the ship, the *Capitana.*

Then this same day, Saturday, the 4th of the month of September of the said year, being in the region below the Equinoctial Line as has been said, before the said General, and in the presence of myself, the Purser, and many other persons, there was thrown from the ship the *Almiranta* into the *Capitana*, attached to a cord, a document which consisted of a sheet and a half, signed with the names of Pedro Rodriguez and Gregorio Gonçalez of the said ship. The said pilots of the *Almiranta* declared that what was written therein and signed with their names was the opinion they had to give of the voyage and navigation in hand, the tenour of which, and of a certain document which is signed at the foot by the said General, is as follows:

On Friday, the 27th of the month of August 1568, in the ship which sailed as *Almiranta* in this new voyage of discovery of the islands, and which is called *Todos Santos*, being in the gulf in the latitude of 50 degrees south, and about 150 leagues from the island of Santa Catalina, lying to the south-west-quarter-south, the ships engaged in this discovery, the *Capitana* and *Almiranta*, being close together under sail, Hernando Gallego, Chief Pilot of the said fleet, General Alvaro de Mendaña being present, asked Pedro Rodriguez, master and pilot of the said ship, what was his opinion of this weather, and whether we should continue to follow the south-east course as we were then doing, or whether we should go upon the other course towards the north; bidding him give his opinion thereon, for such was the General's command. To which the said Pedro Rodriguez replied that his opinion was that we should steer for the coast of New Spain, which is the nearest coast inhabited by Spaniards, and not continue upon our present course; in the first place because the wind had blown and was blowing from the east-south-east to the east-north-east, and never remained fixed in one quarter for twelve hours, as they had seen, for every day it had obliged them to tack in different directions; in the second place because, even if the wind would allow us to advance to the south-east, and we wished to go up to 20 and 25 degrees or more and see and learn whether there were more islands than those discovered, or any mainland, it was now late. For though it had been decided in the island of San Christoval and the Puerto de la Visitacion de Nuestra Señora that, if the weather permitted us to steer to the south-east, we should advance 700 leagues, to seek and learn whether there were land, this was understood to be from the time when we left the said island of San Christoval, and not at present, when we were more than 150 leagues from it. In the third place because it was more than fourteen months since this ship was careened, and there was great lack of rigging owing to what had been worn out in the tempests and rough weather which we had suffered and met with during the course of this long voyage, and in order to go now and discover what we thought so uncertain, it would be necessary to careen again, for which pitch, caulking and grease were wanting; and also there was great need of both rigging and hawsers; in the fourth place because through their labours more than half the sailors were ill, and the soldiers likewise; and further because we had very little provision, and therefore the rations served out were eight ounces of bread a day, and eight ounces of meat three days in the week; and even at this rate we had only bread for three months and meat for a month, and no more. Therefore it was understood, and held to be certain, that if we went now to make further discoveries, we should be in great danger of being lost, which would be a great disservice to His

---

[1] Or *otros*, others, referring to the rest of the witnesses in the *Capitana.*

Majesty, who would thus receive no report of the islands and lands discovered in this voyage. And therefore he was convinced, and gave it as his opinion, that the best and wisest course which could then be followed, according as the weather permitted, and for the reasons stated, was to go in quest of the nearest land inhabited by Spaniards, which was the coast of New Spain, for which the winds were now most favourable, there to repair the ships and provide themselves with all things necessary both for provisioning and careening, and everything else; and then, if the General thought it conducive to His Majesty's service, after the ships had been repaired and provided with everything else, to set out anew upon his voyage of discovery, he should then return with all good speed, for he was ready with all his friends to continue serving him. And this he has given as his opinion and as being the course most conducive to His Majesty's service. And the said Pedro R^{s}. signed it here with his name, "Pedro Rodriguez."

And then this same day, month, and year aforesaid, there presented himself immediately in the said ship, the *Almiranta*, Gregorio Gonçalez, pilot, accompanied by the said Pedro Rodriguez; and in answer to the question of the said Hernando Gallego, the Chief Pilot, and to the order of the said General, after well weighing and considering the prevailing wind and the present necessity, he said that the said ship should be both careened and provisioned, his opinion being in conformity with that of the said Pedro Rodriguez, because this was and is the most proper course for the reasons above stated; and this he gave and has given as his opinion, and signed it with his name, "Gregorio Gonçalez."

On board the ship *Capitana* of this fleet, called *Los Reyes*, navigating under sail in the region below the Equinoctial Line, on Saturday, the 4th of September, 1568, before the illustrious Señor Alvaro de Mendaña, Governor and Captain-General for His Majesty, Pedro Rodriguez and Gregorio Gonçalez, pilots of the ship *Almiranta*, threw this paper and petition on board, tied to a rope, and said that everything contained therein was what they asked and begged of His Worship—Don Hernando Henriquez, Gravyel Muñez, Gaspar de Colmenates and other persons being witnesses.

His Worship, the General, seeing these petitions of all the pilots of the fleet, said that, in spite of all set forth above, it seemed to him that they ought to proceed with and complete the said navigation and discovery, if they could steer from east to south-east and south-south-east, that the discovery might be completed in that direction; but that if they made for Peru, as they were all of opinion that it was more for the service of His Majesty and more fitting and necessary to follow the said course, they should do so in such a direction as the weather permitted, that they might the more speedily reach land; and he ordered and commanded the said pilots to follow the said navigation in the direction which would most quickly bring them thither, without making it necessary to put His Majesty to any further cost and expenditure before reaching the coast of Peru, which was to be their stopping and landing place, there to give an account to the very illustrious Señor Lope Garcia de Castro, Governor of Peru, of what had been accomplished, that he might send it to His Majesty. And he ordered me, the Purser, to give a record of all to the said pilots, and to make a copy thereof, and I delivered it to him, and he signed it with his name, Alvaro de Mendaña.

GOMEZ H$^{RS.}$ CATOIRA.

After reaching this region where these requests were made, we sailed to the north-east till we reached 5 degrees north latitude, and to the north-west, as far as 6⅓ degrees. And afterwards we sailed north and north-quarter-north-west and north-east and north-north-west, for the winds shifted to the north-east, and east-north-east. With these winds we reached 8½ degrees north latitude, and at daybreak, before sunrise, the Chief Pilot sighted land, and when it grew light we saw that it was some shoals, which surrounded some very small islands. The Chief Pilot said that these were the shoals of San Lamo [St. Bartolomeo] for which they had been on the look-out for some days; and he had told them the latitude in which they were.[1] But before reaching these, being near the Line, we had seen signs of inhabited land, such as palm-mats, leaves and burnt sticks.[2] We inferred that there is much land below the Line. We also met with heavy showers before reaching the said shoals. And the General ordered the pilot to approach them, to see whether we could anchor under shelter of the island, and whether there was any water, and, if so, to provide ourselves with it; and he took it ill, saying that it was an uninhabited land, and that we should pass on. In the midst of these discussions we discovered two other islands to leeward of the reef. We kept at a distance from them, and from a reef which reaches almost from one to the other. We approached them and saw some huts from the ships. We launched the boat, and Don Hernando, with some soldiers and sailors, got in and went ashore, and the Master of the Camp went in the boat of the *Almiranta*. On reaching the land they all saw that there was no water, which was what we wanted most. They found no man nor woman, for they had all fled. They found some of the natives' food, which was very different from that of the islands, and of a bad taste and smell. And they found fermenting under the ground, a kind of beverage like *chicha*,[1] and the people also had cocoa-nuts and made oil of them. And, seeing that there was no water, nor anything which was of use to us, they returned to the ships, and brought a piece of iron lashed to a stick, the size of a small nail, which was a sign that Spaniards had been there. They also found a large shed, old and not well roofed. It was suspected that some ship of the Philippines had touched or been lost there.[2] We endeavoured to anchor near the islands, but, although we were close in, we found no bottom, but, when very near land, we found twenty fathoms and let go the anchor, and immediately it dragged and dropped in more than a hundred fathoms. And such was the fury of the current, that in a short space it carried us out of the shelter of the islands and shoals, and it had such force that, although there was no wind or sea, but only the current, the hook of the anchor was twisted, though it was a large one. Then, seeing that for lack of a harbour we could not stop, we put out to sea, and took in the boats, and sailed with the prow to the north and north-north-east and north-north-west, according as the winds served us; and so we went up to the latitude of 20 degrees, where we found a low and uninhabited island. We came near it on the eve of San Francisco, and so we gave it that name.[3] And when we came close we saw that it had a large lagoon within it which is filled by the tide; and we approached it against the will of the pilots, all judging that we were near the coast. The General told them that it would cause little inconvenience to lose a day and take water for our use;

---

[1] The Musquillo Atolls. See pp. li, 67, and 185.

[2] They had passed a few leagues to the west of the Gilbert Islands.

---

[1] *Chica* was a Peruvian fermented liquor made from maize; the beverage of the Musquillo Atolls was probably the fermented sap of young cocoanut palms, commonly called "cocoanut toddy."

[2] See pp. li and 68, *note*.

[3] Wake's Island, see p. 69, *note*.

and we sailed all round it, but there appeared to be none. It lies from north to south, and with the shoals it may be about seven leagues in circumference. Having sailed round this island we steered north, and north-north-west, one quarter more, one quarter less, as the wind served us; and although it was possible to sail to the south-east the pilots would not do so, saying that the northerly course was better than the south-easterly. And thus we went up to 32 degrees, always declining at other times to the north-west, because the *Almiranta* could not lie closer to the wind, or rather, as it seemed to us all, because it was through negligence that she fell thus to leeward, though the pilots said that they could do no more. And, as we sometimes saw her sailing to windward as we did, it was supposed that they made her fall to leeward on purpose, so much so that sometimes we bore down astern upon her. And the General asked them where they were steering to and whether they wished us to be lost, for the land was not so near as they thought. They always said that they were doing their best and could do no more. All that day she remained with us, although we kept ahead and nearer the wind; and the next day it was the same until nine or ten o'clock at night, when we saw her pass and fall to leeward astern of us, at which we were much astonished. On Saturday, the 17th of October, she could not be seen. Then the Chief Pilot furled the sails, and remained with only the fore-sail set to lie to. We waited all that night (*sic*), and at night-fall we saw her from the forecastle to windward of us, and, though our place was ahead of hers, we could not fetch up to her. The Chief Pilot set the mizzen-sail, saying that it was better to wait for her until morning, and, if she could not then be seen, it would be a sign that she had passed and we would set sail to come up with her; and certainly it caused us great vexation to see the favourable weather wasted and be unable to set sail. The wind freshened until the morning, when we sent aloft to see whether the *Almiranta* was in sight. As she could not be seen we set the main-sail and other sails, intending to sail thus till noon, and, if she could not then be seen, to go back, presuming that she had remained behind. An hour after we had set sail it became necessary to furl the main-sail, and lie with only the fore storm-sail, because of the fury of the wind, which increased to such a pitch that the sea and wind seemed to denote the wrath of God, for it was supernatural, and the sea rose so high with every gust of wind that it was above the stern of the ship, and the waves washed over it, so that all those who were below the quarter-deck and upon it were drenched through with water, and some were carried over it by the force of the water. And, as some were at variance, the General and Fray Pedro Maldonado exhorted them, and they embraced each other and were fully reconciled. At two in the afternoon the wind began to blow like a hurricane from every point of the compass, and according to the wind, so was the swell of the sea; and seeing ourselves in these straits we commended ourselves earnestly to God. Seeing this great storm the General went out under the quarter-deck to render some assistance, and as he went out there came such a violent gust of wind from the north that the ship heeled over to port till she was half under water; and so pitiful was it to hear the cries and clamour which arose, all calling on God and Our Lady to assist them, that it was enough to break one's heart, and it seemed to be the Day of Judgment for all. They shed many tears, beseeching God to have mercy on them, and there was no man who had any hope of escape. And being in these straits God in His mercy again inspired us with a means of remedy, for the General consulted with the pilot whether it would be well to cut down the main-mast, and he replied that it would, but that, being far out at sea, it would be difficult for us to get out of the gulf without it. And a sailor, having an axe in his hand, was ordered to cut it down, but the pilot persisted two or three times that he should not cut it, until, upon his thus persisting, the sailor was told first to cut away the rigging to leeward. He did so, cutting it to windward as well, and when he had struck the mast twice it went overboard with all the rigging, main-top, yards and sails. In the meanwhile the boat was floating on the deck, and several sailors threw it easily into the sea, though, if the ship had been on an even keel, a thousand men would not have sufficed to move it, full of water as it was. During this storm the Chief Pilot found that he was within eighty leagues of the coast of New Spain, though the pilots of the *Almiranta* thought that they were very much nearer; and when their opinion had been asked before, they had said that Cabo de Fortunas lay to the north-east. Upon this, as they were cutting down the mast, but before it went overboard, the ship righted a little, and the pilot ordered a small sail to be unfurled on the foremast; but they had hardly unfurled a caburn,[1] when all the rest gave way and the sail was torn to shreds. Then the pilot sent me on to the prow to see whether it was possible to make a little sail with a blanket. I went forward with great difficulty, astride of the starboard bulwarks, for I could not get along the middle of the ship When I reached the prow I found three or four negroes and several sailors, half-dead; by sheer cudgelling I made them hold the blanket each on his own side, and as they did so the ship gradually righted, and rising from the trough of the sea, fell slowly to leeward, notwithstanding that the storm was still severe. We gave great thanks to Our Lord for having delivered us from such great peril.

---

[1] *Caxeta* or *cajeta:* caburn is an old English word of unknown derivation, meaning a kind of twine, or spun yarn; the word is also translated "quilting" in Neuman's *Marine Dictionary*, 1799.

So also did Juan Enriquez, the pilot, who tried to pass to the prow and fell into the water inside the ship; he began to swim, but, being heavy, he was going to the bottom and would certainly have been drowned inside the ship, had it not been for Cordovylla, a negro, who threw himself in and got him out. We were in great difficulties all that day, and all showed the good courage which they ever displayed in all the dangers which beset them. We sailed with the fragment of the sail, while we were making a small storm-sail out of a bonnet,[1] which was little more than a yard in height, holding the sheets in the hand to assist the steering, in order that as the waves were great and many, we might be able to turn the poop quickly to meet every wave. This weather lasted until Monday night, when it began to grow calm. The pilots laid the blame of this storm upon the General, saying that it was his fault that it had overtaken them, because Hernan Gallego had told him, when the *Almiranta* fell so much to leeward, to take the crew and provisions on board the *Capitana*, and abandon her, for, that if he did not, we should find ourselves in great danger, and be brought to disaster. And, having heard the pilot, all wished this to be done; and it appears that the pilot had foretold what would happen, but his proposals always seemed to the General to be an unprecedented course, and he gave his reasons for his decision. Our ships were parted from each other in this storm, and we began to navigate alone in great grief and sadness, thinking that, if the storm had overtaken the *Almiranta* as it had overtaken us, she must be lost; and in this sorrow we went on for many days without seeing land, at which we were all amazed. Three days after we had cut down the mast in the storm, we met with another, which seemed to us worse; and, if we had not cut down the mast, we could not have escaped from it, unless God had miraculously delivered us. We began to steer to the east and east-south-east and east-north-east, going up to 30 degrees, and down to 27 degrees, with moderate winds, though with little sail, and sometimes to the north-west. Seelng that we had voyaged for so many days with a moderate wind, and that we had not been able to discover land, the soldiers were discontented and fearful, thinking that there was some mistake in the navigation, since it was not possible for the pilot to be so many leagues out of his reckoning, for we had made a long voyage in an easterly and westerly direction.[1] And, seeing that we had not made the land and that there was some mistake, they consulted together whether we ought not to turn back, and this was a worse torment than all that we had endured. And they spoke of it to the General, who met their arguments with sagacity, telling them that they were wrong and that it was madness to put back, explaining to them that we had nowhere to provide ourselves with what was necessary for ourselves and the ship, and that they knew that for more than two months the allowance of water had been only half a pint a day, and that the land of New Spain was nearer than [any] to which we could put back. But nothing sufficed to pacify them, and they bade him consult the pilots and do as they suggested, making it appear that these also desired it, but the contrary was the case. And the General told them that he did not wish to consult the pilots, for he knew that the nearest land which lay behind them was the aforesaid shoals, and they were distant more than 600 leagues, whereas the coast could not be far off. They replied that they had no longer any faith in charts and suffering such hardships, they again began to urge that it would be well to put back as the best means of saving our lives. Thereupon, as Our Lord had ever assisted us in our labours and perils, He did so in this, which was one of the worst which beset us, for, if we had turned our prow, we should never have been heard of again. He sent a calm a little before noon, and as we lay thus in great tribulation, we saw a large piece of timber drifting with the current, the sight of which gave us great joy, for it was clean and quite free from barnacles. A sailor immediately jumped overboard and secured it, and it was a log of very good wood, having a very pleasant smell. At the sight of this good omen the General told the soldiers that they had but little faith and constancy, for the sailors were always of the same opinion as the Chief Pilot; and that God was pleased that we should not perish, for he took it that God had sent the piece of wood to encourage us; and this was believed to be certainly the case, for we found it nearly 100 leagues out at sea from east to west, and it was clean. The next day in the morning there came a fair wind and we had a shower, and we soaked up the water with sheets, which enabled us to economize what we had on board for more than four days. And thus, every time that it rained, we kept the water and drank of it, and the showers went a great way towards saving us from an utter lack of water, for we ended by drinking only every other day, and then only half a pint each, without wine or anything else whatever, or any food but the aforesaid.

---

[1] *Boneta*, a piece of canvas, laid in light winds to the leech of the mainsail.

---

[1] "Por que avygamos camynado mucho de leste hoeste."

Eight days after we saw the log we sighted land, the Chief Pilot being upon the poop. He called the General and myself, as his best friends, and pointed it out to us, but it was not very distinct, and, as on other occasions we had seen cloud banks which looked like land, we would not believe it. He said that it certainly was land, but bade us say nothing about it until we reached it, for it was papers, and that they did not know what was to be the end of such a long journey, or when the hardships they endured were to cease. And certainly they had reason enough, for, besides the thirst they endured, for many days their rations had been no more than eight ounces of mouldy biscuit with no other food whatever, and with half a pint of water, of which half was crushed cockroaches, and such necessity was not to be endured for so long a time. They suffered from severe sickness, especially in their mouths; for some had their gums swollen over their teeth, and from hunger others became blind; and thus a boy that we had with us, a native of Guadalcanal whom we had captured, remained blind. The General consoled them, saying that he saw and understood well the straits we were in, and held that the best remedy was to go forward, and that he did not do this because he objected to putting back, for he would better serve God and His Majesty by putting back and being saved, than by persisting and being lost; that he had always told them the truth and they must believe him, and that it was possible that if we had steered south we should not have met with this storm, for which the pilots were to blame. But in spite of all this he could not convince them that we ought not to turn back, until he promised that we should do so, but said that it was not reasonable to do it then for the sake of a day or two of contrary wind; for, after we had put back, if our provisions gave out completely with the calms, we should be more easily lost, and should be unable to reach either land, and would remain in the midst of the sea with no resource whatever. This argument seemed good to them, and the pilots and sailors consoled them, saying that they had great confidence in the coming moon, but that if this failed, they would put back. Upon this they were pacified for the time being; but the next day, finding themselves so afflicted and suffering such hardships, they again began to urge that it would be well to put back as the best means of saving our lives. Thereupon, as Our Lord had ever assisted us in our labours and perils, He did so in this, which was one of the worst which beset us, for, if we had turned our prow, we should never have been heard of again. He sent a calm a little before noon, and as we lay thus in great tribulation, we saw a large piece of timber drifting with the current, the sight of which gave us great joy, for it was clean and quite free from barnacles. A sailor immediately jumped overboard and secured it, and it was a log of very good wood, having a very pleasant smell. At the sight of this good omen the General told the soldiers that they had but little faith and constancy, for the sailors were always of the same opinion as the Chief Pilot; and that God was pleased that we should not perish, for he took it that God had sent the piece of wood to encourage us; and this was believed to be certainly the case, for we found it nearly 100 leagues out at sea from east to west, and it was clean. The next day in the morning there came a fair wind and we had a shower, and we soaked up the water with sheets, which enabled us to economize what we had on board for more than four days. And thus, every time that it rained, we kept the water and drank of it, and the showers went a great way towards saving us from an utter lack of water, for we ended by drinking only every other day, and then only half a pint each, without wine or anything else whatever, or any food but the aforesaid.

Eight days after we saw the log we sighted land, the Chief Pilot being upon the poop. He called the General and myself, as his best friends, and pointed it out to us, but it was not very distinct, and, as on other occasions we had seen cloud banks which looked like land, we would already late; and we kept silence, and at the morning watch it lay close to us. The Chief Pilot called me and said that I might now claim *albrisaras*,[1] and bade me cry "Land ho!" and he pointed it out to me, and we were close upon it. And as it seemed to me that there could be no better *albaziras* (*sic*) than to give them such good tidings, I began to shout "Land! Land!" Then all came up from below and began to embrace me and each other, weeping for joy, and all rendering thanks to Our Lord for permitting us to see it, especially on such a day, for it was the feast of Our Lady of the O.[2] We put back to seaward until daybreak, and saw that there were three small islands near the main-land, and they were given the name of Las Isles de la O. They are in 30 degrees north latitude. And this was the first land of New Spain that we sighted. On arriving at it, we saw that the sea-charts which we carried were a little in error, because no one had navigated that way; and we went cruising along the coast, taking account of all the rocks, that the Chief Pilot might correct the charts.

Running along this coast in the latitude of 27 degrees, we put into a bay more than 40 leagues across, which was not on the chart, and we were one night in it, in much peril; it had some islands at the mouth and within. We anchored in seven fathoms, and as it was night and the islands shut us in, we did not know where we were. And then the Chief Pilot recognised that it was a bay; and at daybreak the pilot said that it was called la Baya de la Trinydad,[3] but that they did not make it out to be so large. Then there came on a mist and fog and we could not see the way out. Finding ourselves in seven fathoms, we cast anchor, and as the cable was paid out, the stem came to a stop in five fathoms, and at a short distance from where we were the sea was breaking, as if upon shoals. We were four days in this bay without being able to get out. There is a good clean bottom all over it, and a good harbour; and all the land that we passed from the time we first made it, to this part, and nearly as far as California, is very arid, for we never saw a place where we could take water, and we suffered the same privations as in the gulf until the 1st of January, 1569, when we met with a contrary wind and anchored near a river, close to the mouth (*boca*) of California, where we landed with much difficulty and danger for want of a boat. We remained there thirteen days, and timber was cut to make a boat, and ten or twelve pipes of water were put into the ship with great labour on the part of the sailors, who got them on board by swimming with girtlines. We caught a few fish which the men ate, and with these and some albatrosses[1] which were killed, we fed the sick, as great dainties. We left there with the intention of going to the first Christian port which we could find, to seek relief for the sick. And on passing from California we committed to the sea two soldiers who died, one Matia Pinelo, and the other Juan de Ribera. Sailing near a harbour of New Galicia which they call Puerto de la Cruz, between Culiacan and the Puerto de la Navydad,[2] and trying to anchor in it, the wind blew so violently from the north-west that we were forced to pass on, as it is not a safe harbour in that wind. The soldiers were much grieved because we passed without making that port, for they thought that they would die before reaching some land where they could relieve their necessities; and they thought that it was to avoid delay that we did not make the port, but it was not so. From the time when we left California we were about twelve days in reaching the harbour of Santiago de Colima,[1] and we entered it on the 23rd of the month of January, in the year 1569.

---

[1] *Albricias*, the reward given to one who first announces good news.

[2] See p. 75, *note*.

[3] La Trinidad is inside the Bay of Sebastian Vizcaino, in 28 deg. 30 min. N. lat.

---

[1] *Alcatracez.*

[2] Culiacan, being inland in N. lat. 24 deg. 30 min., it is evident that Cayutlan in 18 deg. 40 min. is meant. Puerto de la Cruz must be some anchorage in Manzanillo Bay, which lies midway between Cayutlan and Navidad, in the state of Colima.

From the time when we left the port of the island of San Christoval nearly six months were spent in coming thither, during which we suffered the privations aforesaid and many more. A white parrot had been brought from that land, a thing well worth seeing; and when Don Hernando was at the point of death in the gulf, it was killed to save[2] him for us all. This caused great grief, for it was a very rare bird, the like of which has never been seen. When we would have entered the Puerto de la Navydad, from which we had come direct, there was a stiff gale, seeing which Hernando Gallego said that we must give it up, and make for this [port] of Santiago de Colima, which is a bay where fishermen are generally to be found, for he was well acquainted with it. As we arrived there towards afternoon, a boat came out to meet us with a man named Ladrilleros, who had been a pilot in Peru. We concluded that God had sent him thither for our relief, for he had come thither but a short time before from the place where he lived, sixteen leagues distant, to fish. He recognised Hernando Gallego at once, though he had not seen him for thirty years.[3] He made us many presents of birds for the sick, for there are many in that land, and fish for the healthy.

---

[1] In N. lat. 19 deg. 5 min.

[2] *Purgar*, in old Spanish, is to save. It is not clear whether the white cockatoo was killed for food, or as a sacrifice.

[3] This may have been the Juan de Ladrilleros who was sent by Garcia de Hurtado, Governor of Chile, in 1557, to survey the coast as far as the Strait of Magellan. All his crew died of starvation and cold, except two men and himself.—*Voyage of Pedro Sarmiento*, by Sir Clements Markham, p. 217.

Then the General wrote to the Chief Alcalde of the town of Colima, sixteen leagues off, informing him that we had come thither in great necessity, and begging him to command us to be supplied with provisions. He sent a favourable answer in his letters, but did not then do according to what they contained, for he supposed that we were *Luteranos* with whom Hernando Gallego had joined, and so they continued to think for some days. The news spread as far as Mexico, which is 120 leagues from thence, and as far as San Sonate and Realejo, which is more than three hundred, and right down the coast; but they sent us no provisions whatever, until they afterwards found out the truth, and then many inhabitants came to see us, and brought us ample provisions, and the Chief Alcalde did the same. And a rich gentleman named Pedro de Arevalo made us many presents. Here we built a boat for the ship.

Two days after we had reached this port our consort, the *Almiranta*, arrived, dismasted like ourselves, with the Master of the Camp so ill that he was not expected to live. God, in His mercy, brought her thither, for at a point formed by the harbour they had met with a contrary wind which detained them for three days. And as they had not a drop of water in the ship, and they saw smoke arising from where we were, they put in towards it in order to board us or take in water. And, as they came in, they saw our ship dismasted, and, thinking that it was a vessel from China which was repairing there, that she might not capture them, they stopped a little while and fired a gun. I was in the ship, but the General and all, having gone ashore, did not see them; and then, when they came to see what it was, and that on seeing them fire I had displayed the royal standard, they approached us, and we recognised them and they us. They were exactly in the same state as ourselves, neither better nor worse, without boat or main-mast, like us, as I have related in this account. And when we recognised each other we could not believe it, for each had thought the other lost. We were all so delighted that we shed many joyful tears, rendering thanks to Our Lord for all the mercies that He had shown us; for after two months and a half, since we were separated in the storm, He had brought us together again in this port as aforesaid, where we would not have come to anchor unless we had been obliged, nor would they have entered the harbour save for the aforesaid necessity. We bought there a boat for the service of the *Almiranta*, and provisions, on which I spent nearly all His Majesty's purchase money as well as our own. We could not provide ourselves with cordage, sails, nor masts, for there were none.

As we were about to leave that port, there came thither Samano, the Alguacil Mayor [Chief Constable] of Mexico, and a secretary, with a letter from the Viceroy and the Chancelleria[1] (*sic*) for the General, although they had sent him one before, asking him to send a copy of His Majesty's Commission and instructions, certified and signed, and an account of what we had discovered. The General had sent the copy of the Commission and instructions which he carried, and had written an account of the hardships that we had endured, adding that he had discovered much thickly-populated land, and explaining that he did not give him a detailed account, because Your Excellency would not approve of his doing so before he had given an account of it in Peru, from whence he had set out to accomplish the purpose in which he had succeeded. And before this reply reached Mexico, Samano arrived with the other letter, in which the Viceroy ordered him to go to Mexico; and it was understood that he enjoined the inhabitants of Colima, and the places through which he passed, upon a penalty, to accompany him to deliver it. We waited for him to arrive, and after he had come and delivered the letter, the General understood that the Viceroy wished the report of the voyage we had made to be sent by way of New Spain. And when the General knew that he was coming, he waited to see the said Samano, that he might give it to him. He waited for him to arrive, and after he had spoken with him, he learned from him that the Viceroy wished the report of the voyage he had made to be sent to the Viceroy by way of New Spain. And when he understood this, and that the people were assembled, and had told him that they had been enjoined under penalty to escort him, it seemed best to him, in order to avoid scandal which would cause displeasure to His Majesty, and might do great harm on both sides, to endeavour to embark; and so he did, while Samano and his secretary had gone to rest for a while. And he used artifice towards him, saying that he was going to the ship to fetch the report and give it to him, as he had been sent to ask for it. And from the ship he wrote a letter to Juan de Samano, telling him that he was about to depart to make his report to Your Lordship, using other arguments, at which Samano was much vexed and disappointed; and he used every effort to obtain an interview with the General, but he was allowed no opportunity; and that evening we set sail.[1]

---

[1] Chancilleria. The Supreme Court of Justice.

Several soldiers deserted in this port of Colima, after the arrival of the *Almiranta*, on account, it was supposed, of certain debts which they owed in Peru. And the Master of the Camp had two of them outlawed, for certain matters which occurred on board his ship after we had separated from them, in consequence of which Pedro Sarmiento wished to lodge certain information and obtain a warrant, and I presented certain depositions, upon the testimony of which the General laid his information: he had deprived him of the post of captain for reasons which he will state to Your Lordship, but afterwards, upon the intercession of certain gentlemen, he restored it to him, and gave him back that title.

---

[1] This passage is an illustration of the mutual jealousy and want of co-operation between the authorities of the Spanish colonies at that time. It also explains the unfavourable tenour of Orosco's report to the King, quoted on p. lviii.

We set out from the harbour of Colima on the 2nd day of the month of March; we cruised along the coast of New Spain. We entered the harbour of Capulcro [Acapulco], and found it in commotion, for it had not been certified that we were not Lutherans. And when they recognised Hernando Gallego, whom we used as a shield, they were pacified; but they had no news to give us. This occurred as we sailed by the port, and we continued on our way without casting anchor, until we reached the port of Guaturco,[1] where we found the same state of things. The *Capitana* cast anchor outside to wait for the *Almiranta*, which was behind. Some of Hernando Gallego's negroes went ashore to get a little grass for some horses,[2] and the people of the country recognised them and were reassured.

That night I went ashore to buy some necessary articles, and then I returned, and we resumed our journey without hearing any further news, and continued our voyage as far as Çonçonate (*sic*),[3] cruising along the coast of Guatimela

---

[1] Guatulco, in N. Lat. 15 degrees, 48 minutes.

[2] These horses must have been taken on board at Colima, perhaps to earn freight.

[3] Sonsonate roadstead, N. Lat. 15 degrees, 18 minutes, 25 miles east of Acajutla. Gallego says that this occurred at Caputla (Acajutla), the port of San Salvador, in 13 degrees, 32 minutes.

(*sic*). At Sonçonate (*sic*) we again found all in commotion, and a boat came out to us; they recognised Hernando Gallego and were reassured. We went forward, cruising along the coast as far as Realejo, in the province of Nicaria [Nicaragua], and entered the said port of Realejo on the 8th of April, 1569.[1] Here also we found the people in commotion, and Hernando Gallego at once made peace and tranquillised them, for tidings of us had reached as far as this. We remained in that port, repairing the ships with great difficulty, for we had no money; and Hernando Gallego lent me his money upon a bond which I gave him. We provided ourselves with all things necessary, and took on board some Mexican goods which we found there, being paid freight for them, which was a great help to us.

On the 27th of May of the said year we left this port of Realejo on our way back to Peru, and we cruised along as far as Cape Guyon, and from thence we crossed to the coast of Peru, and sighted Malpelo on the 12th of July. On the 14th of the same we sighted land in Peru, which was Cape San Francisco. We pursued our voyage, and on the 30th of the same the *Capitana* cast anchor in Puerto Viejo. The General, pretending to be a Mexican merchant, and I, the Purser of the ship, landed, in order to get news of Peru. We asked what tidings there were of ourselves, and they replied that the sea had engulfed us, and they greatly deplored our fate. Thereupon we embarked again, without saying anything, and set sail, and cast anchor at the point of Santa Helena[2] on the 8th of July.

We were eight days at anchor in this port waiting for the *Almiranta*, which was always behind us. Here the General sent a man ashore to give notice to Your Lordship; and, when the *Almiranta* arrived, we set sail at once and anchored in Payta on the 24th of the said July. We were well received there, and remained several days awaiting the coming of the *Almiranta*, and when she arrived, we set sail. Pursuing our navigation, when we were off Truxillo a disaster befell us, which was as follows. The boatswain, Pedro Ramos, had fallen out with a Corsican named Monflin, who had been appointed steward a few days before. And as the said Monflin was working the pump, he drew out a knife and struck him [Pedro Ramos] under the arm, and he survived only two days. The General tried him, and condemned him to be hanged, but several gentlemen and friars having interceded for him, he granted their appeal.

---

[1] Gallego makes the date April 4th.

[2] In S. Lat. 2 degrees, 18 minutes.

On the 20th of August we reached the port of Santa,[1] where we remained waiting for the *Almiranta* eight days, at the end of which she arrived and we set sail. We coasted along as far as El Cerro del Arena,[2] where we anchored again until the *Almiranta* came up. Then we set sail again, and reached the port of Callao of the city of Los Reyes, on the 11th of September, 1569, twenty-two months and a-half from the day on which we had set out. We were well received.

During our navigation we learned of many things which are to be found in the islands, from the Indians, whom we brought with us, as they became acquainted with our language. They said that there is clove, which they call *aguro*, and ginger, of which we brought a *docena*,[3] and pearls. We found the pearl shells from which the natives make plaques. And one of them said that there was gold in his land, which they call *abarta*. And when he was asked how it was formed, [he said] in the rivers, and that they crush the earth and wash it in troughs, and that it is like grains of maize, and that they do not set great value upon it.[1] And when we said that we had not seen any, he replied that it was in the interior and not on the sea-shore. And all the rest said that it was to be found in the country of this man, whose name was Perico, his country being called Pauro.[2] All the inland expeditions were made in the [other] islands, and not in this man's country, for it is not a port.[3] There is also cinnamon, which they called *laquyfa*, but it is not genuine, and the other things aforesaid, and others which they named.

---

[1] In S. Lat. 8 degrees, 95 minutes.

[2] Possibly Salinas, about 60 miles north of Callao, is meant.

[3] *Docena*, a weight of twelve pounds, in use in Navarre.

The soldiers and men who died in this fleet are as follows:—

Alonso Martin, soldier, died in the first island of Santa Ysabel, from the effects of a wound inflicted by the Indians.
Diego de Frias, of fever, in the said island.
Gaspar Perez Gallego, died in the said island.

Killed by the Indians in going in the boat to fetch water—

Juan Perez, steward, a Biscayan.
Castro, a half-breed of Peru.
Diego de Herrera, a servant of Your Lordship.
Juan de Salas, an old soldier of Peru.
A young man named Trexo del Condado.[4]
Gaspar Alvares, servant to the General.
Two slaves, belonging to the Chief Pilot.

---

[1] No doubt the Spaniards put leading questions, to which the native assented, wishing, as Melanesians do, to give the answer most pleasing to the questioner.

[2] Bauro, the native name of the southern portion of S. Christoval.

[3] The word is difficult to read in the original: *parte*, *parto*, or *puerto*.

[4] Probably the lad who was the first to sight the Isle of Jesus. See p. 99.

Another slave, belonging to the boatswain, Pedro Ramos.

Another slave, His Majesty's smith.

There died of sickness in the said island of Guadalcanal:—

Benyto de Aguilar, an old soldier of Peru.

R^{o}. de Paladin, fife-player.

Andres Nuñez, an old soldier and lancer of Peru.

Francisco Gutierrez, apothecary.

In the island of San Christoval:—

Gaspar de Vargas, page to the General.

Paredes, a half-breed of Rio de la Plata.

Juan Gomez, soldier, killed by the Indians.

Dionysio . . .,[1] sailor, died at sea on the return voyage.

Juan Moreno, of Flanders, bombardier of the *Almiranta*, died on leaving the port.

Domingo de Azpitia, sailor, on the return voyage.

Diego . . . .,[1] sailor, of the *Capitana*, died on the return voyage.

Simon Arragoces, sailor, of the *Capitana*, on the return voyage.

Diego, slave of Andres Nuñez, died on the return voyage.

Matia Pinelo, servant of Your Lordship, died on the return voyage.

Juan de Ribera, soldier, died on the return voyage off the coast of New Spain.

Antonio Brasa, off the coast of New Spain, of scurvy (*dellas encias*).

Alonso Guerrero, of the same, in the same region.

Pedro Ramos, killed by the Corsican off Truxillo.

---

[1] Illegible.

The soldiers who remained behind, and did not return to Peru:—

The two who were paid off or discharged by the Master of the Camp.
Alonso de Torres, soldier of . . .[1] deserted at Colima.
Myguel Velasquez.
Sebastian de Arvyldo.
Juan de Vargas, farrier, married in Cuzco.
Rr°. de Morales, stocking-maker.
Juan de Mesa, married in Trana, with leave, to return to his wife.
Juan Lopez, servant of the General, with leave, to become a monk.
Hernando Gallo Bonyfas, with leave.
Damyan Flamenco, bombardier,[2] maimed, with leave to get cured.
Luys Garcia, soldier, deserted.
Juan de Vejar, soldier, deserted.
Myn de Aguero, soldier, deserted.
Anton Crespo, soldier, deserted.
Myn de Aguirre, soldier, with leave, to become a monk.
Pedro de Mesa, ship's-boy of the *Capitana*, deserted.
Francisco Hrs. (Hernandez), barber, deserted.
Diego Valles, half-breed, deserted.
Mendoza, mulatto, deserted.
Moronta, mulatto, deserted.
Bonyfaz, half-breed, deserted.
A°. Ps. [Antonio Perez] half-breed, deserted.
Fray Pedro Maldonado and Fray Pedro de Laguna, Franciscans, remained.

---

[1] Illegible.

[2] May be read Damyan Bonbardero, of Flanders.

In Realejo there remained :—

Al^{o}. R^{s}. [Alonso Rodriguez], freed by the Master of the Camp, for Costa [Rica], and Gu^{o}. R^{s}. [Rodriguez his brother], and two negroes.
Francisco Pastor, soldier, with leave
Naburro, half-breed, with leave
Caballos, half-breed, with leave
} All for Costa Rica.

Pedro Sarmiento again attempted to procure a warrant at Realejo before an Alcalde, and the General again placed him under arrest in his house; and he fled with a slave of his. And they say that he was set free by the priest of a mission, who was named Diego Valenta, and the mission El Viejo. The General wished to take the priest before the Archbishop of Peru, and issued his requisition against the said Sarmiento, that he might be sent prisoner to Peru, where he has laid his information against him.

We departed, as has been said, from the port of Callao of Los Reyes, on the 19th of November, 1567, and we went up west-south-west to latitude 15¾ degrees. And then we sailed west for twenty days, with a very fair wind and a smooth sea. And, seeing there were no signs of land upon that course, we turned and descended west-north-west, as far as latitude 6 degrees, a little more or less. And seeing that upon that course we found [no] land, we sailed in the said latitude for twenty-four days, till we came to discover the island of Jesus. The leagues which we travelled are stated above, and the account is given of how we went up and down. The distance travelled from east to west was more than was put down in the day's run, for we always had a calm sea and a fresh wind astern.[1] And upon our return voyage also we found the way longer than we expected, and were twenty-two months and a-half in getting back to Los Reyes, as before stated. We reached Los Reyes on the 11th of September, of the year of Our Lord 1569.

---

[1] Probably he means that the day's run as estimated by dead reckoning fell short of the real distance owing to an insufficient

---

allowance for the strong westerly current. It was through this that the distance of the Solomon Islands from Peru was so greatly underestimated, and the group so long eluded the search of subsequent navigators.

IMPERIAL LIBRARY

A very Particular Account

given to

Captain Francisco de Cadres

by an

INDIAN NAMED CHEPO,

who was about 115 or 120 years old,

Of the Solomon Islands which are in the South
Sea, with their names, and the time which it
took the native Indians to go from Ports
Arica and Ylo, to the said
islands, etc.

Followed by a strange account of a ship[1] which,
navigating from Chile in very stormy weather,
was driven to an island in latitude 18⅛ degrees,
round which she cruised for fifty days without
finding the end of it, etc.[2]

---

[1] *De un Indio* here in the original, but *navío* later in the text.

[2] The *Egerton Add. MS.* 1816, fol. 223, in the British Museum. The original is in a very old handwriting, with no indication of date. We have included it as a specimen of the fabulous stories of the lost Isles of Solomon which were current in Peru at the close of the sixteenth century.

TWO STRANGE ACCOUNTS
OF
THE SOLOMON ISLANDS.

AN Indian named Chepo, about 115 or 120 years old, promised to answer truly whatever questions should be put to him concerning the said islands, it being understood that he would be put to death if he lied. This was in the time of Captain Francisco de Cadres, who sought the said Indian and found him and elicited from him the following account. He was asked—

Question. From whence the said Indians crossed to the said islands.

Answer. From Puerto de Arica and Puerto de Ylo.[1]

Q. How many days does it take the said Indians to perform this voyage?

---

[1] Though Chepo evidently considered that he might as well be hanged for a sheep as for a lamb, most native traditions have some slight substratum of truth, and he may have been relating a garbled version of an actual voyage of the Indians. Arica, which lies in about south lat. 18 deg. 22 min., is the Peruvian port captured by the Chilians in 1881; Ilo lies about seventy miles north of it. The islands nearest to these ports are the Galapagos (1,350 miles), Juan Fernandez (1,020 miles), and Easter Island (960 miles). The last named lies more directly opposite Arica (the bearings being about west-south-west), and the navigator would certainly have to pass near the barren islet of Sala-y-Gomez, of which Beechey wrote: "When first seen the island has the appearance of three rocks." It is, however, far from being mountainous.

For Juan Montañes, the author of the second story, we fear that no defence is possible.

A. After two months' journey they reach a desert island called Coatu, in which there are three high mountains and many birds.

Q. On proceeding to the said islands, on which side do they leave the said desert island?

A. On the left.

Q. What is the name of the first island after the desert island?

A. It is called Qüen, and is thickly populated; the name of its chief is Qüentique.

Q. Are there any other chiefs?

A. Yes, two, called Uquenique and Camanique.

Q. Is there another island?

A. Yes, and it is called Acabana.

Q. How many days does it take to go from Qüen to Acabana?

A. Ten days.

Q. Which of them is the larger?

A. Acabana.

Q. Is there a chief in the said island?

A. Yes; his name is the same as that of the island; he has a son called Casira, who governs and commands the whole island instead of his father, who has delegated to his son power to govern the said island without his intervention.

Q. Are there any other chiefs subject to the said father and son?

A. Yes; all the chiefs of the first islands aforesaid, and others whose names he does not know.

Q. Is this a greater chief than Guaynacaba?[1]

A. Yes.

Q. Is the said Acabana known to be an island.

A. No; it is so large that it is not known whether it is an island or a continent.

---

[1] Probably a local Peruvian chief of the time.

Q. Are there any sheep?

A. Yes; and also lama and deer.

Q. What do the people wear?

A. Cotton and wool.

Q. What do they wear on their heads?

A. They go bare-headed, like the low-born Indians.

Q. What does Acabana wear upon his head?

A. A *chuco*[1] like a *collas*,[2] with gold all round, and feathers on the top.

Q. How is he dressed?

A. In wool and cotton, very fine.

Q. In what does Acabana travel from one village to another?

A. In a litter; and all the frame and the upper part which screens him from the sun, are of gold.

Q. What is his dwelling built of?

A. It is very well built, with mud walls bound round with ribbons of gold; all the chiefs are served off gold, but he never saw silver, and there is none there.

Q. Where do these Indians worship?

A. In a *guaca*[3] which they have there; and in it is an image or figure of gold.

Q. What offerings do they make to it?

A. Blue, red, and white stones, and quantities of gold, and cotton and woollen stuffs of all colours, very fine and variegated.

Q. What is their language?

A. He knew that they understood the language of D. Sebastian Camanchae.

He was asked whether all that he had said was truth, for, if not, he would be punished. He confirmed all that is stated above, and added that they used rafts of wood.

---

[1] A kind of covering made by the Indians of Peru.

[2] A white folded cloth worn on the head by Peruvian Indians of rank.

[3] The Guacas are artificial conical mounds, with a niche in which the Peruvian Indians bury their dead.

ANOTHER ACCOUNT.

A long time ago, a ship from the province of Chile was driven by stormy weather to a very large island, round which she cruised for fifty days without coming to the end. They took the sun, and found the latitude to be 18½ degrees, or thereabouts. There were but few on board, and therefore they did not dare to land, although the Indians endeavoured by signs to persuade them to do so, promising to give them all that they required. Being in want of provisions, they resolved to cast lots, and he on whom the lot should fall should go ashore and take his chance (*a su aventura*). The lot fell upon one Juan Montañes, and he landed and went inland for 9 leagues. He saw three villages, one of which seemed to him as big as the city of Los Reyes. He was with the Indians seven days, and was very well treated by them. Their dwellings are sheds (*galpones*), 400 ft. long and 100 ft. wide, for he measured them. The Indians are of great stature and bearded; the women are amiable, and wear their hair braided to the ankles; they seemed friendly with the Spaniards, being bearded like them, and when the said Juan Montañes wished to regain the ship, the Indians pressed him to accept some of the gold plate on which they are served. Upon their importunity he took some, but with fear, thinking that it might be a plot to kill him; and they gave him three emeralds. Setting sail again, they reached a port called Ylo, upon the coast of Peru, coming from the said islands to the said port in nine days. All this account was given to Captain Juan de Yllanes, who came to Spain bringing the said Juan Montañes with him. He asked His Majesty to grant him an expedition to these islands, but, though his request was granted, he died upon the journey.

These islands must be reached from Puerto de Arica, taking the volcano in the bay as a landmark, such being the custom of the Indians who come and go thither. As soon as the said volcano disappears the desert islands are reached. Going in among them, after two days, the large island, which seems to be a continent, is sighted, and what lies to the west is still to be discovered. He also said that there were a number of cattle like those of Peru, and small camels.

The Indians of the coast of the said island are dressed in nets, and are great seamen; the people of the interior are the nobles. The Indians of the coast said that there were two chiefs in the said large island, who ruled the country.

He also said that while the said ship was off the coast they saw fifty-eight canoes and rafts, large at the top, their gunwales being bound round with gold, and that there were many people in them.

CORRIGENDA.

P. v, *note, omit the words,* the names are not mentioned in these documents.

P. xli. *The quotation from Catoira's narrative should read:* In that island the Indians wear caps made of the white and fair hair of Indians, and they have some of their own made in this manner, and some have them blue in the middle and white at the sides, for they bleach them (p. 353).

P. 14, *note, for* Easterly current, *read* Westerly current.

P. 15, *note, for* 30°, *read* 30 minutes.

P. 20, *line* 1, *omit* (Thambra).

P. 21, *note,* Benau *is probably meant for* Vinahu.

P. 22, *note* 4. *Though Don Pascual de Gayangos points out that* palmetto *is a species of fan-palm, it is clear that it is here used for some other fruit, for there is no edible variety of the fan-palm in the Solomon Islands. Mr. Woodford suggests the banana.*

P. 30, *line* 7, *and* 50, *line* 8. Panales, *translated* honey-comb, *and* honey, *is probably intended for* pana, *the small yam of the Solomon Islands.*

P. 31. *Dr. Codrington points out that the cry of* Mate! Mate! *would merely be a warning of danger. The word means* death *rather than* kill.

P. 44, *note* 1, *should read* Kokobara and Vulelua: *note* 2, *should read* Rura Sule and Rura Kiki.

P. 55, *note. Mr. Woodford says that the district is not called* Lungo, *but that the names* Lango, Longu, Lungo, *and* Lungu *occur on this coast.*

P. 59, *notes.* O-wariki *and* O-waraha *should be spelt* Owa-riki, *and* Owa-raha.

P. 125, *note* 2. *Dr. Codrington thinks that these teeth were those of the cuscus opossum.*

P. 167, *note* 1. *Small dogs' teeth are mixed in bracelets with the red shell beads.*

P. 172. *omit note* 1. *Upon enquiry we can find no authority for assuming* boru *and* bocru *to be identical words.*

P. 177, *note* 1. *The seat of the Resident Commissioner is in the Florida Group, and not in* Aola (*or* Aula, *which is the more correct spelling*).

P. 177, *note* 3. Santiago *was the name given to the northern coast of* S. Christoval: *Mendaña meant* San Juan, *as is shown in a passage on p.* 386.

INDEX.

Aba Ran, a chief, 234
Acabana Island, 466
Acapulco Port, lvi, 77, 78, 455
Account by Juan Montañes, of landing at a fabulous island, 468
Adventurers, The, biographies of, x to xix; Alvaro de Mendaña de Neyra, x; Hernan Gallego, xi; Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa, xiv; Pedro de Ortega, xviii; Hernando Henriquez, xviii
Almonds found, 91, 213, 319, 396
Alonso de Ovalle, account of Chile, xiii
Alvarado, navigator, iii
Amarotobo, or *Ciamarrotovo*, chief, 115, 167, 234
Ambuscade by Indians, massacre of Spaniards, xxxvii, 51, 176, 203, 322
Amherst of Hackney, Lord, vii, as to *Savo* Island, xxx, 31
Analysis of water, at volcanic springs, *Savo*, 31
Andrez Nuñez, expedition in search of gold, xxxiv, lx, 90, 175, 203, 306, 314; death of, xxxv, 175
Anonymous narrative, discovery of Solomon Isles, 193 to 214
Aola (*Urare*), town, xxxix, 43, 55, 177; illustration of, 44
Apamama Island, 15
Arms from S. Christoval and Guadalcanar, illustration of, 178
Arracifes, Island of Reefs (*Vangunu*), xxxii, 34, 153, 174
Arrest of Pedro Sarmiento, lvi, 78, 93, 461
Arica, Puerto de, Peru, 463, 469
Arrival of ships at Solomon Isles, 13, 86, 99, 162, 196, 221
Asea Island, 68
Asuncion, La, port (probably Ariel harbour), xl, 46, 349
Atacames, Tacames, coast of Peru, 79
Atafu Island (Union Group), 11
Atequipara Point, xix, 7
Atlas, "The Buccaneers," description of, xiv, *note*
Atogla Island (S. Ysabel), 20, 87
Atreguada Island (*Ulawa*, Contrariété, *Uraba*, La Treguada), 48, 177, 205, 358
Australia del Espiritu Santo, lxx
Austria Sound, xxxii, 35, 155
Aytoro, province in S. Christoval, 181

Babalay, chief, 23, 115, 167, 234
Bahia de S. Thomé (Bay of Sebastian Vizcaino), Lower California. *See* Bay.
Balbao, discoverer of the South Sea, ii
Bartolomeo, S., shoals, 67, 185, 209, 440
Basil, Sweet, 183, 213
Baso Village, *Maringé* lagoon, 87, 169, 239
Bats, 34, 135, 154, 202, 213, 277, 296
Bauro Island (*Paubro*, *Pouro*, *Bouro*, *Guare*, *Bulo*, S. Christoval), xlii, xliv, lxx, lxxv, 55, 57, 90, 92, 177, 183, 206, 344, 374, 393
Bay, Estrella, xxii, 19, 36, 87, 88, 111, 196, 230
Bay, Sebastian Vizcaino, Lower California, lv, 75, 190, 449
Bay, Thousand Ships, xxxi, 293
Bedea, chief, 141
Bene, chief, 21, 170, 259
Bene Bonefa, chief, xxiii, xxxi, 32, 259; disappearance of his tribe, xxiii
Bernaldino, San, or Bernardino (Nalimbiu), river, 41, 53, 330
Bernardo, or Bernaldo de la Torre, claimed to have discovered New Guinea, iii, 66
Beru Island. See *Borru*.
Betel-nut chewing, 277
Billebanarra, *Bileban-Arra*, *Biley Banharra*, *Vilevanarra*, *Vylevanarra*, chief, xxiii, 20, 21, 87, 112, 121, 166, 197, 231
Boko Village, 24
Bokokimbo, or S. Helena River, 42, 337, 374
Borru Island (Veru, St. George, de Jorge), xxiv, xxxi, 32, 33, 151, 153, 173, 181, 202, 293, 295

Bougainville, explorer, i, ii, lxxiv, lxxv

Brigantine, building of, xxii, 20, 128, 166, 197, 271; First voyage of discovery, xxix to xxxiii, 22 to 37, 88, 129, 171 to 174, 199, 272; Catoira's report, 280 to 300; First voyage of discovery, full report, 137 to 158; launched, xxviii, 22, 199; named the Santiago, xxviii, 199; Second voyage of discovery, xxxiv, xxxviii to xliii, 39 to 51, 90, 175 to 177, 306, 328 to 375; Third voyage of discovery, xliv to xlvi, 57 to 61, 92, 178, 179, 206, 394-407

"Buccaneer's Atlas," or "South Sea Waggoner" charts, xiv *note*

Buena Vista Island (*Pela*, *Gela*), xxix, 27, 29, 89, 142, 146, 172, 181, 200, 284

Buka Island, lxxiv

Cabo de Cruz, 66, 420

Cabo de Fortunas, lii, 70, 72

Cadres, Francisco de, wrote Chepo's narrative, ix, 465

Caja of Meta, affirms existence of gold, 89

California, Point of, 76, 190

Callao, Port of the City of Los Reyes, lvii, 6, 17, 19, 97, 161, 191, 217, 457

Cambra, *Canball*, or *Samba*, village in Estrella Bay, 19, 231

Candelaria reef or shoals, xxi, lxxv, 14, 16, 87, 106, 163, 225

Cane, sugar, 89, 91, 212

Cannibalism, xxvii, 21, 51, 170, 198, 257

Canoe of Spaniards wrecked, 36, 156, 298

Canoes, crescent-shaped, xxii, 109, 227; illustration, xxxii; speed of, 228; trading canoes, 347

Cape, Corrientes, 76, 210; Gallegos, xiii; Guion, Guionos, lvii, 79, 456; Pitt, xxxii; Prieto (Pueto, Puerto), 26, 27, 32; Récherche, xlii; S. Francisco, 80; S. Lucas, lv; Surville, xlii, 50

Capodoro, Gulf, 218

Caputla, Port of San Salvador (Acajutla), lvi, 78

Careening the ships at Port of La Visitacion de Nuestra Señora (S. Christoval), xlvii, 92, 180, 206, 426

Carteret, re-discovered the Solomon Isles, i, lxxiv

Catoira, Gomez, Chief Purser, description of his manuscript, viii; dates corrected by, 6, 11, 22, 25; narrative, 215-462

Cerros Island, 75

Charton, Edouard, translated the Anonymous MS., viii

Chepo, 466

Chiefs, names of native. *See* Tabrique.

Chica, Peruvian fermented liquor, 441

Chisel, file, or nail, found at Musquillo Atolls, iii, li, 68, 209, 441

Choiseul Island (S. Marcos), xxxii, lxxiv, 35, 89, 174

Church, Colonel G. E., identification of certain places by, xix

Ciamarrotovo, or *Amarotobo*, Chief, 115, 167, 234

Clubs, stone-headed, illustration of, xl; description, xl, 182, 204, 343, 350; from New Britain, illustration of, 182

Coatu Island, 466

Coboa, Chief, 115, 167, 234

Cocks and hens found. *See* Fowls.

Cocoanut milk poured over cooked yam or taro, method described, 336

Codrington, Revd. R. H., D.D., thinks Spaniards heard word "tauriqui" from Nukufetau natives, xx; reason for not identifying S. Christoval Island with Pouro, xlv, lxx; remarks on and identifications of native words, lxxix; on sacred relics, 368

Colima, City, lv, 77, 78, 93, 212

Colmenates, Gaspar de, sent to high ridge in St. Ysabel, 252; stung by nettle, 133; wounded, 253

Compans, M. Ternaux, purchased Catoira's MS., viii

Concivycion, de la, Gulf (Concepcion), 102, 222, 223

Conde de Nieva, murdered, v

Contrariété Island (La Treguada, *Uraba*, *Ulawa*), xli, lxxiv, 48, 177, 205, 358, 374

Cortes, despatched expedition in 1537, to explore Equatorial ocean, iii

Cost of fitting out the expedition, vi

Cross erected, xxxiii, 38, 90, 111, 165, 203, 231, 303, 380; stolen by natives and returned, xxxiv, 39, 203, 304; respected by the natives, 380

Cruz, Puerto de la, xxxiii, 38, 177, 375; departure from, 381

Customs and Habits of Natives, lxxvi to lxxviii; adorn their tambu houses, lxxviii, 198; blacken their teeth, lxxviii, 134, 277; catch water in palm stems, li, 68; chew betel-nut, lxxiii, 4, 134; cut their hair into different patterns, 134, 277; dance and sing, 88, 113, 233, 352, 359; dye and bleach their hair, lxxviii, 29, 236, 353; illustrated, 133; eat the bodies of the slain, lxxvi, 21, 49, 51, 170, 198; expert canoe-builders, lxxvi; nudity, 21, 27, 49, 88, 146, 197, 204, 289, 353, 426; head-hunting, lxxvi, 24, 33, 181; invoke spirits of the dead, 368; kiss the feet of superiors, 244; make friends by exchanging names, 166, 197; make fruit "*tabu*" by tying leaves round trunk of tree, xxxiv, 308; strip plantations of the dead, xxxiv, 308; use shell money, lxxvi, 142, 167; wear armlets, lxxviii; wear shells in ears, 353; worship, 20, 56, 89, 91, 178, 198, 204

Dancing, Natives fond of, 233; as incantation, 401

Dates, of departure from Callao, xix, 6, 83, 161, 195, 217; landing at Estrella Bay, xxii, 19, 87, 111, 165, 196, 230; departure from S. Ysabel for Guadalcanar, xxxiii, 37, 89, 175, 203, 300; departure from Guadalcanar, xliii, 55, 91, 177, 204, 381; departure for Callao, xlix, 63, 191, 212, 426; movable feasts, 6

Davila, Diego de, reconnoitred coast, 170, 245; river, 171, 246

Dead Chief's plantation stripped, 308

Death of Andres Nuñez, xxxv, 175

Deaths during expedition to Solomon Isles, list of, 458, 459

Devil invoked, 56, 178, 391, 401; worshipped, 89, 198

"**Diabolico,**" hostage sent by Bilebanara, xxvii, 261

Discovery. First Voyage of brigantine, xxix; full report, 137; Second Voyage of brigantine, xxxviii; full report, 328; Third Voyage of brigantine, xliv; full report, 394; of Hawaiian Islands, by Juan Gaetano (Islas de Mesa), 1555, iii; of Solomon Islands, 13, 86, 99, 162, 196, 221

Dingo, the, lxxxii, 213

Dogs found, 213, 275

Doves, 88, 213, 275

Dress of *Vylevanarra*, 231

Dressing the hair, methods of, 197, 277, 353

Duff, Group of Islands (discovered by Quiros), lxx

Eagles, 275

Ears, shells worn in, 352, 353; illustration showing distention of, 352

Eggs, 213

Ellice Group, 14

Edge-Partington, Mr., supplied photograph of native clubs, xli

Escondido Port (Hidden Port, probably Uhu), 45, 182

Essomeric, chief's son, married heiress of Sieur Paulmier de Gonneville, ii

Estrella Bay, xxii, 19, 36, 87, 88, 111, 196, 230; illustration of, 20; now desolate, xxiii

Eugenio Point, La Bahia de S. Thomé, 75

Expeditions, exploring Solomon Isles, in brigantine; First Voyage, Ortega and Gallego, xxix, 22 to 37, 88, 129, 171 to 174, 199, 272, 280; full report, 137 to 158; Second Voyage, Hernando Henriquez and Gallego, xxxiv, xxxviii to xliii; 39 to 51, 90, 175 to 177, 306, 328 to 375; Third Voyage, Francisco Muñoz Rico and Gallego, xliv to xlvi, 57 to 61, 92, 178, 179, 206, 394-407

Expeditions by land, Solomon Isles, Ortega, xxiii, 20, 87, 115, 121, 166, 234; Sarmiento, xxiv, 20, 87, 119, 121, 168, 169, 238, 243; Gabriel Muñoz and Diego Davila, 121, 170, 245; Ortega, ascent of main range, S. Ysabel, xxv, 21, 121, 169, 246; Ortega to Meta's territory, xxviii, 121, 171, 263; Henriquez, ascent to look for brigantine, 121, 135, 278; Andrez Nuñez, xxxiv, lx, 90, 175, 203, 306, 314; Mendaña and Ortega, xxxv, 175, 176

Expeditions, various, to South Sea, Toribio Alonzo de Salazar, 1526, ii; Fernando Grijalva and Alvarado, 1536, iii; to Philippines, Ruiz Lopez de Villalobos, 1542, iii; to New Spain, Bernaldo de la Torre, 1543, iii; to New Guinea, Inigo Ortez de Retes, 1545, iii; to Philippines, Miguel Lopez de Legaspe, 1565, to found first colony, iv; to Solomon Isles, Alvaro Mendaña de Neyra, 1567, v, 1

Fapula Island, 23
Favenc, Ernest, theory that de Gonneville discovered Australia in 1503, ii
Feasts, moveable, dates of, 6
Feday, district or village, 55
Fego Antepeque, gulf (Tehuantepec), 7, 218
Fernando Grijalva, explorer, iii
Fights with Natives of S. Ysabel, 20, 34, 35, 87, 140, 153, 169, 202, 242, 253, 295; Buena Vista, 27, 144, 286; La Florida, 28, 200; Guadalcanar, 31, 39, 43, 44, 54, 57, 59, 98, 205, 303, 316-327, 333, 376, 377; Guadalcanar, massacre of Spaniards, 51, 176, 203, 321; Malaita, 25, 47, 139, 283, 346; Ninuha, 23, 199, 282; Santiago, 49, 367; S. Christoval, 57, 178, 206, 360, 391, 409, 413, 414; S. Catalina, 59, 92, 402; S. Ana, 60, 92, 179, 405; S. Dimas, 148, 201, 290; Treguada, 356
Figueroa's dates, 6
File, chisel, or nail found, iii, li, 68, 209, 441
First notable discovery of islands in Pacific, 1555, iii
Fleurieu (French geographer), xxxi, 16
Flints, worked, lxxviii, 351
Flokora Point, 24, 25
Flores Island, 38
Fornander, writer, iii, iv
Florida, La, Island (*Olevuga*, Isla de Flores), 29, 38, 89, 147, 173, 181
Fowls indigenous, xxxv, lxxxii, 40, 60, 88, 91, 183, 203, 213, 308, 318, 390
Francisco de Cadres, captain, wrote Chepo's narrative, ix, 465
Fray Francisco de Galvez (vicar), 111, 117, 118, 165, 231, 236, 237, 426, 255
Fray Juan de Torres, accompanies Ortega's expedition, 255
Fruit, 182, 213, 255, 276
Funafuti Island, 104

Gaetano, Juan, pilot and discoverer of Hawaiian Islands, iii
Galapagos Islands, iv
Galera, La, North Island, 26, 29, 89, 141, 172, 200, 284
Gallego, Hernan, Chief Pilot; description of his manuscript narrative of voyage, vii; facsimile of title-page, lxxxvi; puzzling method of giving compass bearings, ix; career, xi; confusion of name with Hernan Gallego Lamero, xii-xiv; promises to bring the expedition to land by end of January, xx; neglects to land at Nukufetau Island, xxi, 222; descries land on February 7th, Ysabel Island, xxi, 225; superintends the building of brigantine, xxii, 197; pilots brigantine, xxix, xxxiv, xlv, 129, 206, 272, 306; illness, xxxvii, 177, 204; protests against south-easterly course ordered by Mendaña, l, 66, 428; recognised by Ladrilleros at Santiago de Colima, lv, 451
Gallego River, xiii, 38, 175
Gallegos, Cape, xiii
Galvano, Governor of Moluccas, iii
Galvez, Fray Francisco de (vicar), 111, 117, 118, 165, 231, 236, 237, 255
Ganigo, or *Ganagau*, Chief, 115, 167, 234
Gara Islet, 24
Gatukai Island, 34
Gau Island, 23, 24
Gayangos, Don Pascual de, catalogued the manuscripts in British Museum, vii; as to *Gandul*, 41, 289
Geese, wild, found, 213
Gela Islands (Florida), xxix, 27, 89, 146; illustration of, 28
Gilbert Islands, l, 66, 68, 440
Ginger, wild, 174, 201, 213, 292, 457
Gold, indications of, xxxv, lx to lxiii, 40, 88, 91, 92, 93, 172, 181, 201, 457, 458
Gold, search for, xxxiv, 306, 319
Golfo de Concepcion, 102, 222, 223
Gomez, Juan, soldier killed by natives of S. Christoval, 410-413
Gonneville, Sieur Paulmier de, voyage of discovery, ii
Gower Island, lxxiv
Grijalva, Fernando, iii
Guadalcanal Island (Guadalcanar, *Kulengela*, *Gaumbata*), xxx, xxxiii, lxxv, 32, 38, 39, 46, 50, 90, 91, 150, 175, 201, 292
Guadalupe Island, 29, 30
Guali Island (Sesarga, Savo), xxx, 30, 31, 32, 149, 201
Guan y China, king of S. Christoval, 180
Guare Island, S. Christoval, *Paubro*, *Bauro*, xlii, xliv, lxx, lxxv, 55, 57, 90, 92, 177, 183, 206, 344, 374, 393

Guatulco, 78, 455

Guiding Star, xxii, 19, 87, 88, 111, 165, 196, 230

Guion, or Guionos, Cape, lvii, 79, 456

Gulf of Fego Antepeque (*Tehuantepec*), 7, 218

Gulf de la Concivycion (Concepcion), 102, 222, 223

Guppy, Dr., author of "The Solomon Islands," vii; identification of islands in the Gela (Florida) group, xxx, 29; geological conditions of Guadalcanal and S. Christoval, lxiii; inhumanity of Spaniards, lxiii; position of Island of Jesus, 14; coincidence between native word *Mate* (death), and Spanish *Matar*, to kill, 31; mistook domestic fowls for *megapodidæ*, 40; identifies San Urban with peninsula of Cape Surville, 50; Quiros, when at *Taumaco* in 1606, heard of a native pilot from *Pouro*, xlv, 57; description of Wake's Island, 69; identifies Bay of Sebastian Vizcaino and Point Eugenio, 75; origin of worked flints, lxxviii, 351

Habits and customs of Natives, lxxvi to lxxviii. *See* Customs.

Hair, method of dressing, 197, 277, 353; bleached and coloured, lxxviii, 29, 236, 353

Hakelaki Island, 18, 21, 259

Halavo, 30

Hahua chumpi (Outer Island), rumoured discovery by the Inca, Tupac Yupanqui, iv

Havi, chief, uncle of Bilebanara, xxv, 87

Henriquez, Hernando Don, the Alferez-General, description of, xviii; visits *Vylevanarra*, 278; commands brigantine on her second voyage, xxxiv, xxxviii to xliii, 39 to 51, 90, 175 to 177, 306, 328 to 375; finds a chisel in Musquillo Atolls, iii, li, 68, 209; seriously ill, liv, 451; takes news of arrival of ships at Callao to the City of the Kings, lvii

Herbs, 276

Hernan Gallego (Chief Pilot). *See* Gallego.

Hernan Gallego Lamero, xii

Hill, Lion's Head, 41

Homeward Voyage commenced, xlix to lvii

Houses built on piles in Florida Island, 29

Idol temples, 198, 239, 253, 254, 355; burnt by Spaniards, 253

Inigo Ortez de Retes, or de Rota, discovered New Guinea, iii, 66

Invoking the Devil, 56, 178, 391

Island, *Acabana*, 466; *Apamama*, 15; *Arracifes*, or Reefs (*Vangunu*), xxxii, 34, 153, 174; *Asea*, 68; *Atafu*, Union Group, 11; *Atreguada* (Ulawa, Contrariété, *Uraba*, La Treguada), 48, 177, 205, 358, 374; *Atogla* (S. Ysabel), 20, 87; *Beru*, 38; *Borru* (*Veru*, St. George, S. Jorge). *See* Veru. Buena Vista (Pela, Gela), xxix, 27, 29, 89, 142, 146, 172, 181, 200, 284; *Buka*, lxxiv; *Cambra* (S. Ysabel), 19; Cerros (Cacones), 75; Choiseul (S. Marcos), xxxii, lxxiv, 35, 89, 174; *Coatu*, 466; Contrariété (Atreguada, Ulawa, Uraba, La Treguada), 48, 177, 205, 358, 374; De la O, or Nuestra Señora de la O, 75, 190, 449; Duff Group, lxx; Ellice Group, 14; *Fapula*, 23; Flores, Florida, La (Isla de Flores, *Olevuga*), 29, 38, 89, 147, 173, 181; *Funafuti*, 104; Galapagos, iv; Galera, La (North), 26, 29, 89, 141, 172, 200, 284; *Gara*, 24; *Gatukai*, 34; *Gau*, 23, 24; *Gela* (*Pela*), Buena Vista in modern charts, xxix, 27, 29, 89, 142, 146, 172, 181, 200, 284; Gilbert, 66, 68, 440; Gower, lxxiv; Guadalcanal (Guadalcanar, *Gaumbata*), xxx, xxxiii, lxxv, 32, 38, 39, 46, 50, 90, 91, 150, 173, 201, 292; Guadalupe, 29, 30; *Guali* (Sesarga, *Savo*), xxx, 30, 31, 32, 149, 201; *Guare* (S. Christoval, *Paubro*, *Bouro*), xlii, xliv, lxx, lxxv, 55, 57, 90, 92, 177, 183, 206, 344, 374, 393; *Hahua-chumpi* (Outer Island), iv, *see* H.; *Hakelaki*, or *Cuia*, 18, 21, 259; Hawaiian (Islas de Mesa), iii; *Jagi*, 24; Jesus (*Nukufetau*), xxix, 14, 16, 46, 64, 86, 100, 102, 162, 196, 222; Jorge (S. George, *Veru*, *Borru*), xxiv, xxxi, 32, 33, 151, 153, 173, 181, 202, 293, 295; *Kapika*, 24; *Keei*, (Hawaii), ii; Kennedy (*Motuiti*), 14; *Kokobara*, xliv, 44; *Kulengela* (part of Guadalcanar), 32; *Kuria*, 15; Los Ilefes, probably north side of S. Christoval, 90; *Malaita* (de Ramos, *Malayta*, *Onogo*, Malay), xl, lxxiv, 25, 45, 46, 90, 138, 177, 181, 199, 281, 367, 381; Marquesas, xx, lxxi, 9; Marshall Group, 67, 68, 209; *Motuiti* (Kennedy), 14; Musquillo (S. Mateo shoals), li, 67, 185, 209; Natividad (Cacones), lv, 75; New Georgia Group, lxxv, 20, 34, 89; New Hebrides Group, lxx, 59; *Nina-chumpi*, Fire Island, iv; *Ninuha*, 22; North (La Galera), 26, 29, 89, 141, 172, 200, 284; *Nui*, 104; *Nukufetau* (Jesus), xxix, 14, 16, 46, 64, 86, 100, 102, 162, 196, 222; *Oaitupu*, 14; *Owaraha* (S. Ana, *Ytapa*), xlv, xlvi, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208; *Owariki* (S. Catalina, *Aguare*, *Owai'i*), xlv, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208, 399; Pascua, or Pascoa, Florida, 147, 289; *Paubro* (S. Christoval (*Pouro*, *Bauro*), xlii, xliv, lxx, lxxv, 55, 57, 90, 92, 177, 183, 206, 344, 374, 393; Paumotu, 9; *Pela* (*Gela*, Buena Vista), xxix, 27, 29, 89, 142, 146, 172, 181, 200, 284; Ramos (*Malaita*), xl, lxxiv, 25, 45, 46, 90, 138, 177, 181-199, 281, 367, 381; *Ronongo*, 24; *Rura Kiki*, 44; *Rura Sule*, 44; Sabo, 39, *see* Savo; S. Ana (*Ytapa*, *Owaraha*), xlv, xlvi, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208; S. Bartolomeo (Musquillo), li, 67; said to have been discovered in 1536 by Salazar, 185; S. Catalina (*Owariki*, *Aguare*, *Owai'i*), xlv, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208, 399; attempt to take natives for interpreters, 401; S. Christoval (*Paubro*, *Bauro*, *Pouro*, *Bulo*, *Guare*), xlii, xliv, lxx, lxxv, 55, 57, 90, 92, 177, 183, 206, 344, 374, 393; ships left this island for Peru, 426; S. Dimas, 29, 89, 146, 172, 181, 201, 289, 381; S. Francisco (Wake's), lii, 69, 186, 209, 441; S. George (S. Jorge, *Veru*, *Borru*), xxiv, xxxi, 32, 33, 151, 153, 173, 181, 202, 293, 295; S. German, 29, 90, 91, 347, 374; S. Jeronimo, 174; S. Juan (*Ugi*), xlii, 48, 177, 205, 366, 374, 386; S. Marcos (Choiseul), xxxii, lxxiv, 35, 89, 174; S. Nicholas (New Georgia), xxxii, 34, 89, 153, 174; S. Urban, xlii, 50; S. Ysabel (*Atogla*), xxi, xxxii, 19, 20, 25, 32, 33, 37, 87, 88, 91, 111, 132, 172, 180, 196, 230; Santiago, North coast of S. Christoval, 49, 50, 55, 177, 181, 361, 374; Sesarga (*Sabo*, *Savo*, *Guali*), xxx, 30, 31, 32, 39, 149, 201, 291, 302; Sesarga people speak a dialect distinct from any in Solomon Isles, 149; volcanic eruption mentioned in, xxx, 302; *Sisigara*, 24; Society, discovered by Quiros, 1605, lxx; Solomon, i; Starbuck, 9; *Tanakula* (*Gela*), xxx, 30; *Tandai* (Puerto de la Cruz), xxxiii, 38; *Taumaco* (Duff Group), 57; Tres Marias, Las (Three Maries, Three Sisters), xlii, lxxiv, 48, 177, 205, 358; *Ugi* (S. Juan), xlii, 48, 177, 205, 366, 386; *Uraba* (La Treguada, Truce, *Ulawa*). *See* Contrariété. *Vulelua*, 44; *Vangunu*, xxxii, 34; *Vati Lau*, Buena Vista, 30; *Vella Lavella*, 20; *Veru* (*Borru*, S. Jorge), xxiv, xxxi, 32, 33, 151, 173, 181, 202, 293, 295; Wake, or S. Francisco, lii, 69, 186, 209; Ysabel, S. *See* S. Ysabel.

Jagi Island, 24

Jars made of clay found, 173

Jesus, Island of (*Nukufetau*), xxix, 14, 16, 46, 64, 86, 102, 162, 196, 222.

Jorge, S. (S. George, *Veru*, *Borru*), *See Veru*.

Juan Gaetano, pilot in expedition of 1542, and discoverer of Hawaiian Islands, iii

Kapika Island, 24

Keei Island, Hawaii, ii

Kennedy Island, *Motuiti*, 14

Kissing feet of a superior, custom in the Pacific, 244

Koila Village, 32

Kokaibuko Village (*Atogla*), 20, 87

Kokobara Island, xliv, 44, 470

Konda Village, 33

Krusenstern (explorer), 14, 16; as to position of Jesus Island, 14; wrong in identifying Candelaria Shoals with Roncador Reef, 16

Kulengela Island (Guadalcanar), 32

Kuria Island, 15

Lagoon, Maringé, 23, 87, 169

Land, Solomon Isles, first discovery of, 13, 86, 99, 162, 196, 221

Lango Village, 53

Languages, Native, lxxix; different in Savo, 149

Lark shoals, xliii

Launch of brigantine, xxviii, 22, 199

Letter of Juan de Orosco to the king, reporting results of expedition, lviii

Limes, wild, 212
Lion's Head Hill, 41
Liversedge, Professor, water of sulphurous springs analysed by, 31
Lisle, M. de, viii
Lopez de Velasco, geographer, xiii
Lord Amherst of Hackney, Gallego's manuscript in possession of, vii; on the close resemblance of Sesarga to Spanish island of that name, xxx, 31
Los Ilefes Island, 90
Los Reyes, City of (Lima), 97, 161, 217, 461, 462
Lunga Village (Guadalcanar), 53

Macaws, many different species found, 213
Maelago, Chief, 115, 167, 234
Mal Pelo (Peru), 79, 456
Malaita Island (*Malayta*, de Ramos, *Onogo*, Malay), xl, lxxiv, 25, 45, 46, 90, 138, 177, 181, 199, 281, 367, 381
Manewai Harbour, S. Christoval, 55
Manning Straits, 35
Mano, or *Nano*, Chief, 90, 325
Manriquez, Juan, tried to find port at S. Ysabel, 228
Manuscripts, describing the voyage to, and discovery of, Solomon Isles, vii, viii; 1. Hernan Gallego; 2. Pedro Sarmiento; 3. First Narrative of Alvaro Mendaña de Neyra; 4. Second Narrative of Mendaña; 5. Anonymous Narrative; 6. Gomez Catoira; 7. Two Fabulous Stories.
Maps, xiv, lxxii, lxxxvi
Maramasiki Passage, xl, 46
Marau Sound (Guadalcanar), xxxix, 44, 340, 368
Maringé lagoon, 23, 87, 169
Markham, Admiral A. H., as to humanity of Spaniards, lxiii
Markham, Sir Clements, suggests that Nina chumpi and Hahua chumpi are the Galapagos islands, iv; names of the ships fitted out, v
Marquesas Island, xx, 9
Marshall Group Islands, 67, 68, 209; named by Captain Bond, li
Massacre of Spaniards, xxxvi, 51, 176, 203, 322
Martin, or Myn, Alonzo, wounded, died of tetanus, 20, 253, 458
Mboli passage, between S. Dimas and S. German, 30
Meeting, officers and men to discuss the situation, decide to return to Peru, xlvii, xlviii, 61, 92, 180, 206, 418
Mendaña de Neyra, Alvaro de, to command expedition, v; a description of the manuscripts, first narrative, vii; second narrative, viii; his birth, character, and purpose, x; summoned a meeting of officers and chaplain, as to taking natives' food, xxiv, 238; undertakes to help Bilebanara against Meta, xxviii, 261; orders burial of portion of native sent to be eaten, 257; sails from Ysabel Island to Guadalcanar, xxxiii, 175, 300; expedition inland, xxxv, 175, 176; departure from Guadalcanar, xxxviii, 55, 91, 177, 204, 381; calls a meeting to decide future movements, xlvii, 179, 206; has to pledge all his private property and borrow from Gallego to refit ships, lvii; efforts to plant a colony in Solomon Isles, and fate of his expedition, lxvi to lxix
Mendez, Juarez, falls overboard, 221, 387
Mendoza, Don Luis Torres de, vii
Meso, Chief, 55
Meta, Chief, 21, 22, 88, 113, 115, 167, 233, 261; territory of, 23, 46
Miguel Lopez de Legaspe founded first colony in Philippines, iv
Mombalu, Province in Guadalcanar, 90
Montañes, Juan, account of landing on an island from ship driven by stormy weather from province of Chile, and from thence to port Ylo, 468
Morro de Hacarique point (*Acari*, *Hacari*), xix, 7
Morro de la Nalla (Chala), xix, 7
Motuiti Island (Kennedy), 14
Muñoz, or Muñez, Fernan Francisco, voyage of discovery in brigantine, xliv to xlvi, 57, 61, 92, 178, 179; wounded, 206, 393
Muñoz, Gabriel, or Gravyel, kidnaps natives as interpreters, xlix, 63, 92, 208, 425; reconnoitres coast, 121, 170, 245
Musquillo Islands (S. Mateo or S. Bartolomeo shoals), li, 67, 185, 209
Musical instruments, Native, lxxviii, 89, 197, 233

Nail, chisel, or file, found at Musquillo Isles, iii, li, 68, 209, 441
Nalimbiu, or S. Bernardino River, 41, 53, 330
Names, or Yams, 212
Narrative of discovery of Solomon Isles, anonymous, vii, viii, 195 to 214; of Catoira, 217 to 462; of Gallego, 1 to 80; of Mendaña, first, 97 to 160; of Mendaña, second, 161 to 191; of Pedro Sarmiento, 83 to 94; of Chepo, 465; of Juan Montañes, 468
Native words and place-names, lxxxiv-lxxxvi
Natives' dislike of biscuit or wine, 228; illustrations of, lxxviii, 54, 60, 133; pronounced Spanish well, 228
Natividad Islands, Spaniards land on a raft, and cut timber to build a boat, lv, 75
Navidad, Puerto de la, xix, 8, 219; arrival of *Almiranta*, 214
New Georgia Islands, lxxv; head-hunters from, 20; eastern extremity of, 34; San Marcos, 89
New Hebrides Group, two islands discovered by Quiros, lxx; supposed to have been seen by Spaniards, 59
Nicaragua, 79; ships repaired at, 191
Nina Chumpi, Fire Island, rumoured discovery by the Inca, Tupac Yupanqui, iv
Ninuha Islands, 22
Nobolo, or *Nano*, Chief, xxxvii; concerned in massacre of Spaniards, 53
Noctilucae, phosphorescent, 24
North Island (La Galera), 26, 29, 89, 141, 172, 200, 284; illustration of, 142
Nuestra Señora de la O, or Las Islas de la O, special feast day, 75; land first seen, 190, 449
Nui Island supposed to have been seen, 104
Nukufetau Island (Jesus), xxix, 14, 16, 46, 64, 86, 100, 102, 162, 196, 222
Nuñez, Andres, in charge of expedition to search for gold, xxxiv, lx, 90, 175, 203, 306, 314; death of, xxxv, 175
Nutmegs found, 181

Oaitupu Island, 14
Ongtong Java, Candelaria Reef, or shoals, xxi, lxxv, 14, 16, 87, 106, 163, 225
Oranges, wild, 212, 276
Ortega, Pedro de, Maestro de Campo, description of, xviii; sent inland to find Bilebanara, xxiii, 20, 87, 115, 121, 166, 234; made ascent of main range of Ysabel Island, xxv, 21, 121, 169, 246; expedition against Meta, xxviii, 121, 171, 263; expedition with Mendaña, in Guadalcanar, 175, 176; to command brigantine, xxix, 22 to 37, 88, 129 (full report 137), 171 to 174, 199, 272, 280; explores a village in Musquillo Atolls, and finds a chisel, iii, li, 68, 185, 209; at the point of death, lv, 191
Ortega, or Tuumbuto river, xxxi, 32, 38, 40, 150, 201, 292
Owaraha Island (S. Ana, *Ytapa*, *Itapa*), xlv, xlvi, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208
Owariki (S. Catalina, *Owai'i*, *Aguare*), xlv, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208, 399

Palma, Port La, S. Christoval, 61
Pana, or Panales, Yam-like potatoes, 212, 288
Parrots found, 183, 213, 275
Partridges found, 213
Pascua or Pascoa, Florida Island, 147, 289
Passage, Maramasiki cuts the south-eastern end of Malaita, 46; Mboli, 30; Sandfly, xxx, 30
Paubro Island (*Pouro*, *Bauro*, *Bulo*, S. Christoval), xlii, xliv, lxx, lxxv, 55, 57, 90, 92, 177, 183, 206, 344, 374, 393
Paulmier, J. B. (descendant of Essomeric, and canon of Lisieux), ii
Paumotu Islands, 9
Pearls seen, 33, 88, 92, 146, 172, 181
Pedro de Ortega, account of. *See* Ortega.
Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa, v; description of, xiv to xviii; arrest of, lvi, 78, 93, 455. *See* Sarmiento.
Pela Island (*Gela*, Buena Vista), 27, 29, 89, 142, 146, 172, 181, 200, 284
Petitions or Protests against the south-easterly course ordered by Mendaña, l, 430, 434
Pheasants, or Megapode, found, 213, 275
Pigeons, wild, 88, 183

Pigs, 25, 88, 91, 200, 213, 288, 338, 355, 365, 390
Pippins, 276
Pitt, Cape, New Georgia, xxxii
Plantations of food at Guadalcanar Island, 306
Plots to kill and eat Spaniards, 115, 167, 234
Point, Atequipara, xix, 7; California, 76, 190; Eugenio, Lower California, 75; El morro de Hacarique (Hacari), xix, 7; Flokora, 24, 25; Santa Elena, 80
Ponemonefa, Chief of Borru, 151, 173, 241, 293
Population of the Islands, estimated, 180, 181
Port, Acapulco, lvi, 77, 78, 455; Callao, lvii, 6, 17, 19, 97, 161, 191, 217, 457; Caputla, of San Salvador (Acajutla), lvi; Gallego recognised at, 78; Colima, lv, 77, 78, 93, 212; Escondido (Hidden Port), probably Uhu, 182, 346; account of clubs found at, 45; Guatulco, Peru, 78, 455; La Asuncion (Assumption, probably Ariel harbour), xl, 46, 349; La Palma, 61; Praslin, xxxii, 35, 36; Surville anchored here in 1769, lxxiv; Realejo, lvii, 78, 456; Sarmiento remained here, 93; S. Antonio, Lower California, lv; S. Lucar, Lower California, 76; S. Ysabel de la Estrella, 19, 22, 172, 196; Santa, 457; Santiago de Colima, 190, 451; Gallego recognises some fishermen here, lv, 76; Somba (Cambra), 87
Pouro, Island, identification with S. Christoval doubtful, xlv
Pottery made in islands in Bougainville Straits, 173
Prieto, Cape (Pueto, Puerto), 26, 27, 32
Produce of Islands, lxxxiii, 181, 182, 183, 197, 212
Profile of *Gela* Islands, 30
Provisions found, Memorandum of, 212
Puerto de Arica, 465-469; de Hernan Gallegos, spoken of by Lopez de Velasco, and in Espinoza's *Geography of Chile*, xiii; de la Cruz, xxxiii, 38, 177, 375, 381, 450; de la Navidad, xix, 8, 214, 219, 450; de la Visitacion de Nuestra Señora, 61, 63, 92, 178; ships careened here; ships quitted for Peru, 426; Escondido (Hidden Port, probably Uhu), 45, 182, 346; Viejo, Peru, 80; Ylo, 465-468
Punishment of natives for massacre of Spaniards, xxxviii, 90, 176, 326, 377; for killing Juan Gomez, 413

Quaritch, Mr., sold Gallego's manuscript to Lord Amherst, vii; sold the "Buccaneer's Atlas," xiv
Qüen Island, 466
Quiros, Chief Pilot in Mendaña's last expedition, lxix; his discoveries, lxx; mentioned by Dr. Guppy, 57

Ramos, Island (*Malaita*, *Malayta*, *Onogo*, *Malay*), xl, lxxiv, 25, 45, 46, 90, 138, 177, 181, 199, 281, 367, 382
Realejo Port, now known as Corinto, lvii, 78, 93, 456
Récherche Cape, S. Christoval, xlii
Reef, or shoals, Candelaria, xxi, lxxv, 14, 16, 87, 106, 163, 225; de Arracifes, xxxii, 34, 153, 174; Roncador, 16, 106
Refitting ships, lvii
Return journey to Peru, xlix to lvii, 63, 93, 183, 208
Riari, Chief, 115
Rich, Mr. Obadiah, American Consul, viii
Rico, Francisco Muñoz. *See* **Muñoz.**
Riquia, or *Riquya*, Chief, 87, 279
River Bokokimbo, or S. Helena, 42, 337, 374; Diego Davila, 171, 246; Gallego (Nanango), xiii, 38, 175; Nalimbiu, or S. Bernardino, 41, 53, 330; Ortega, or Tu-umbuto, xxxi, 32, 38, 40, 150, 201, 292; Sana, or Zana, Hernan Gallegos cast away at the mouth of this river in 1590, xiv; S. Bernardino, or Bernaldino (Nalimbiu), 41, 53, 330; S. Elena, or Helena (Bokokimbo), 42, 337, 374; S. Matia, Guadalcanar, 245; S. Urbano, Guadalcanar, 38, 311; Tanezo (Tonesco), 219; *Tu-umbuto*, xxxi, 32, 38, 40, 150, 201, 292
Roots called *benaus*, or *Vinahu*, 212
Ronongo Island, 24
Ruabatu, or *Ruavatu*, Chief of, 373, 383
Ruiz Lopez de Villalobos commanded expedition in 1542, iii
Rura Kiki Island, 44, 470
Rura Sule Island, 44, 470

S. Ana Island (Owaraha, Ytapa, Itapa), xlv, xlvi, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208
S. Antonio Point, Lower California, lv
S. Bartolomeo Island, or Shoals, (Musquillo), 67, 209, 440; said to have been discovered by Salazar in 1536, 185
S. Bernardino, or Bernaldino, River (*Nalimbiu*), 41, 53, 330
S. Catalina Island, (*Owariki, Aguare, Owai'i*), xlv, lxxiv, 59, 92, 178, 208, 399
S. Christoval, Native of, illustration, Frontispiece, Vol. I.
S. Christoval Island (*Paubro, Bauro, Pouro, Bulo, Guare*), xlii, xliv, lxx, lxxv, 55, 57, 90, 92, 177, 183, 206, 344, 374, 393
S. Dimas Island, 29, 89, 146, 172, 181, 201, 289, 381
S. Elena, or Helena, River (*Bokokimbo*), 42, 337, 374
S. Francisco Cape (Peru), 80
S. Francisco Island (Wake's), lii, 69, 186, 209, 441
S. George (S. Jorge, Veru, Borru), xxiv, xxxi, 32, 33, 151, 153, 173, 181, 202, 293, 295
S. German Island, 29, 90, 91, 347, 374
S. Jeronimo Island, 174
S. Juan Island, (Ugi), xlii, 48, 177, 205, 366, 374, 386
S. Lucas Cape, Lower California, lv, 76
S. Marcos Island (Choiseul), xxxii, lxxiv, 35, 89, 174
S. Mateo Shoals (Musquillo), li, 67, 185, 209
S. Matia River, 245
S. Nicolas Island (must have been Cape Pitt on Gatukai Island), 34, 174
S. Urbano River, 38, 311
S. Urban Island, or Peninsula, xlii, 50
S. Ysabel de la Estrella Island and Port (*Atogla, Cambra*), xxi, xxxii, 19, 20, 22, 25, 32, 33, 37, 87, 88, 91, 111, 132, 172, 180, 196, 230
Sail seen off S. Bartolomeo Shoals, 68, 185, 209
Salacai, or *Salacay,* Chief, 87, 166, description of, 116, 235
Samba Village or Port, Bilebanarra's Territory, 112; or Canball, 231; or Canbano, 313
Sana, or Zana, River, Gallego cast away here in 1590, xiv
Sanbe, or Sambe, Chief, 167, 234
Sandfly Passage, 30, 148
Santa Port, 457
Santa Cruz, New Hebrides, Mendaña established a colony here in 1595, lxix
Santiago Island, xliv, 49, 50, 55, 177, 181, 361, 374
Santiago de Colima, Port, Gallego recognises Ladrilleros here, lv, 76, 190, 451
Sarmiento, Pedro, advocates voyage to escape Inquisition, v; rated as captain of the *Capitana,* v; description of his manuscript, vii; birth and career, xiv to xviii; disloyalty and disobedience on voyage, xvi, 129; persecution of the Inca family, xvi; jealous of Gallego, and claims to be consulted in the navigation, xix, 85; sent to scale ridge of Ysabel Island, xxiv, 20, 87, 121, 168, 234; obtains food by force from natives, xxxvi, 119, 238, 310, 311; expeditions to punish natives of Guadalcanar for murder of Spaniards, xxxvii, 90, 176, 326; placed under arrest at Santiago de Colima, lvi, 93; also arrested at Realejo, 461; remained at Realejo, lvii; deprived of his post by Mendaña, but reinstated, 455
Sarsaparilla found, 88
Savo Island (*Sabo,* Sesarga, Cesargar, *Guali*), xxx, 30, 31, 32, 39, 149, 201, 291, 302
Sea-ghosts, paintings and carvings of, 355
Search for Solomon Islands ordered by King Philip of Spain, 5
Sebastian Vizcaino Bay, Lower California, lv, 75, 190, 449
Sesarga Island (*Savo, Guali*), xxx, 30, 31, 32, 39, 149, 201, 291, 302; illustration of, 30; severe eruption in 1850, xxxi
Ships for discovery of Solomon Islands, two fitted out,. 53; names of, v, 434
Shoals, Candelaria, xxi, lxxv, 14, 16, 87, 106, 163, 225; Lark, an island supposed to have existed here, xliii; or islands S. Mateo, or S. Bartolomeo, Musquillo, li, 67, 185, 209
Sisigara Island, 24
Snakes, singing, xxvii, 255

Society Islands, discovered by Quiros in 1605, lxx

Solomon Islands, existence doubted, 1 ; expunged from the chart, lxxi ; why so called, lviii, lix ; discovered in 1568 ; re-discovered by Carteret and Bougainville, i

Spikenard found, 182

Somba, or Samba, port or harbour, Estrella Bay, 87, 112

Sonsonate roadstead, 455

Sound, Austria, xxxii, 35, 155 ; Marau, Guadalcanar, xxxix, 44, 340, 368

Spaniards massacred, xxxvi, 51, 176, 203, 322 ; wrecked, xxxiii, 36, 156, 298

Star, guiding, xxii, 19, 87, 88, 111, 165, 196, 230

Starbuck Island, 9

Storm, severe, 71, 210, 224, 443

Straits, Manning, 35

Sugar-cane, 89, 91, 212

Surville, Cape, xlii, 50

Surville, M. de, explorer, lxxiv, 48

Tabrique, *Tauriqui*, or Cacique, Chief, *Babalay*, or *Banalay*, 23 ; plotting to kill Spaniards, 115, 167, 234 ; *Bedea*, 141 ; *Bene* presents a quarter of a boy to Mendaña, 21, 170, 259 ; *Bene Bonefa*, or *Bonesa*, of *Veru* Island. *See* Ponemanafa ; *Billebanarra*, *Biley Banharra*, *Bileban Arra*, *Vilevanara*, *Vylevanarra*, xxiii, 20, 21 ; visits the ships and makes submission to the kings of Castille, 87, 273 ; wishes to exchange names with Mendaña, 113, 166, 197, 232 ; Ortega visits him, 121 ; shows his father "Salacay" to Ortega, 166 ; *Brata* of *Malaita*, 273 ; *Camanique*, 466 ; *Camarrotovo*, or *Amarotobo*, plotted to kill Spaniards, 115, 167, 234 ; *Coboa*, or *Couoa*, 115, 167, 234 ; *Ganigo*, or *Ganigou*, 115, 167, 234 ; *Guaynacaba*, 466 ; *Havi*, uncle of *Bilebanarra*, restored to liberty by Spaniards, xxv, 87 ; *Maelago*, 115, 167, 234 ; *Mano*, see *Nobolo* ; *Meso* of *Urare* 65 ; *Meta*, 21, 113, 115, 121, 167, 233, 261 ; at war with *Bilebanarra*, plotted to kill Spaniards ; *Nobolo*, or *Mano*, or *Nano* of *Mombalu*, Guadalcanar, ordered massacre of Spaniards, xxxvii, 53, 90, 325 ; *Ponemanafa*, of Santa Ysabel, 151, 173, 241, 293 ; *Qüentique*, 466 ; *Requia*, or *Riquya*, brother of Billebanarra, makes submission, 87 ; stayed on board *Capitana* one night, 279 ; *Riari*, or *Rau*, 115, 167, 234 ; *Ruabatu*, or *Ruavatu*, 373, 383 ; *Sanbe*, 167, 234 ; *Salacai*, or *Salacay*, father of *Bilebanarra*, 87, 116, 166, 235 ; *Seseboco*, uncle of *Vylevanarra*, visits Mendaña, 262, 263 ; *Tiarabaso*, 169, 259 ; *Tuadubi*, 318 ; *Uquenique*, 466

Tacames, Atacames, Peru, 79

Tanakula, *Gela* Isles, xxx, 30

Tandai Island, or Point, Puerto de la Cruz, xxxiii, 38

Tanezo River (Tanesco), 219

Taro grown in terraces, artificially irrigated, xxxv, 306

Taumaco, Duff Group, 57

Teguantepeque, Gulf (Tehuantepec), 7, 218

Temples, or Public Halls, 20, 198, 239, 253, 254, 355

Thanksgiving service, 17, 112, 165, 231

Three Sisters' Island (Les Trois Sœurs, Las Tres Marias), xlii, lxxiv, 48, 177, 205, 358

Thousand Ships' Bay, xxxi, 293

Tïaragajo province (*Tïarabaso*, *Baso*), 87, 169, 239

Toribio, Alonzo de Salazar, discoverer of S. Bartolomeo, ii

Torre, de la. *See* Bernardo.

Torres, Fray Juan de, went with Ortega's expedition in S. Ysabel, 255

Town of *Aola* (*Aula*), xxxix, 43, 177

Treguada, La, Island (Truce, *Uraba*, *Ulawa*, Contrariété), xli, lxxiv, 48, 177, 205, 358, 374

Trejo first sights land, 99 ; stays one night with Vylevanarra's people, 260 ; killed by natives, 458

Tucopia, lxx

Tupac Yupanqui, the Inca, discovers islands, iv

Tu-umbuto, or Ortega River, xxxi, 32, 38, 40, 150, 201, 292 ; mouth of, illustration, 150

Turkeys, 275

Ugi Island (S. Juan), xlii, 48, 177, 205, 366, 386

Uhu harbour (probably Puerto Escondido, Hidden Port), 45, 182, 346

Uraba Island (*Ulawa*, Truce, Tre-

guada, Contrariété), xli, lxxiv, 48, 177, 205, 358, 374
Urare (*Aola*), village, 55

Vangunu Island, xxxii, 34
Vati Lau, Buena Vista, 30
Vella Lavella Island, 20
Vessels, Spanish, of the sixteenth century, illustration, xx
Veru Island (Jorge, St. George, *Borru*), xxiv, xxxi, 32, 33, 151, 173, 202, 470
Vilevanarra, Chief. *See* Billebanarra.
Village, *Aola*, 371; *Baso*, 87, 169, 239; *Boko*, 24; *Feday*, 55; *Koila*, 32; *Konda*, 33; *Kokaibuko*, 20; *Lango*, 53; *Lunga*, 53; *Tayla*, 318; *Urare* (*Aola*), 55
Villages burned in Guadalcanar for treachery, 379
Vinahu, native name of certain root, 212, 234
Visitacion de Nuestra Señora, Puerto, or village, 61, 63, 92, 178, 205
Volcano (Sesargar, or Savo Island), in eruption, xxx, 30, 31, 302; severe in 1850, xxxi
Voyage to Solomon Islands, xix to xxix; lasted fifty-seven days, 223; home, xlix to lvii
Vulelua Island, 44, 470

Wake's Island (S. Francisco), lii, 69, 186, 209, 441
War, sign of, between Natives, 233
Water obtained in palm stems, li, 68; at volcanic springs, analysis of, 31
Weapons, Native, xl, lxxvii, 178, 345
Welchman, Dr., as to green-tree frogs, xxvii; method of treating cocoanut milk and cooked yam, 336
Wigs made of vegetable fibre, 351
Women brought to ships to be sold, 236
Woodford, Mr., differs from Dr. Guppy as to *Gela* islands, xxx, 29; Native names of St. George's Island, xxxi, 33; identifies La Asuncion Port as Ariel Harbour, xl, 46; as to clubs made in Malaita, xl; tradition of island formerly existing between S. Christoval and *Ulawa*, xliii; identifies Jesus Island with *Nukufetau*, 14; as to current leeward of Jesus Island, 15; examination of volcano in Sesarga or *Savo*, 31; identifies Ortega River with *Tu-umbuto*, 38; remains of old cultivation in Guadalcanar, 40; San Bernardino River identified as *Nalimbiu*, 41; Bokokimbo River identical with Santa Elena, 42; identifies *Aola*, 43; blackening teeth, 134; paste of chewed betel used to cure pain, 134; bats, 155
Worship of the Devil, 89, 198

Xalosco Port (Jalisco, Salisco, probably S. Blas), lv, 76, 219
Xuarez, Pedro, captain, cured of gout by application of gum found in Guadalcanar, lxxxiii, 183; attacks canoes, 413

Yams or Ñames, food, 212
Yllanes, Captain Juan de, account given him by Juan Montañes of a certain island. *See* Montañes, 469
Ylo, Puerto de, 455
Ysabel de la Estrella, S., island and port, xxi, xxxii, 19, 22, 25, 32, 33, 37, 87, 88, 91, 111; description of people and birds, 132, 172, 180, 196, 230

Zaragoza, Don Justo, publishes second narrative of Mendaña, viii

---

LONDON:
PRINTED AT THE BEDFORD PRESS, 20 AND 21, BEDFORDBURY, W.C.

THE
HAKLUYT SOCIETY.

1901.

President.

SIR CLEMENTS MARKHAM, K.C.B., F.R.S., Pres. R.G.S.

Vice-Presidents.

THE RIGHT HON. LORD STANLEY OF ALDERLEY.
REAR-ADMIRAL SIR WILLIAM WHARTON, K.C.B., F.R.S.

Council.

C. RAYMOND BEAZLEY, M.A.
COMMR. B. M. CHAMBERS, R.N.
COLONEL G. EARL CHURCH.
SIR W. MARTIN CONWAY.
F. H. H. GUILLEMARD, M.A., M.D.
EDWARD HEAWOOD, M.A.
DUDLEY F. A. HERVEY, C.M.G.
E. F. IM THURN, C.B., C.M.G.
J. SCOTT KELTIE, LL.D.
F. W. LUCAS.
A. P. MAUDSLAY.
E. J. PAYNE, M.A.
HOWARD SAUNDERS.
H. W. TRINDER.
CHARLES WELCH, F.S.A.
R. S. WHITEWAY.

Hon. Secretary and *(pro tem.)* Treasurer.

WILLIAM FOSTER, B.A.,
CLIFDEN HOUSE, EARLHAM GROVE, FOREST GATE.

Bankers in London.

MESSRS. BARCLAY & CO., 1, PALL MALL EAST, S.W.

Bankers in New York.

THE MORTON TRUST CO., CORNER OF CEDAR AND NASSAU STREETS.

Agent for distribution, &c., of Volumes.

MR. B. QUARITCH, 15, PICCADILLY, W.

Annual Subscription.—One Guinea (in America five dollars.)

THE HAKLUYT SOCIETY, established in 1846, has for its object the printing of rare or unpublished Voyages and Travels. Books of this class are of the highest interest and value to students of history, geography, navigation, and ethnology; and many of them, especially the original narratives and translations of the Elizabethan and Stuart periods, are admirable examples of English prose at the stage of its most robust development.

The Society has not confined its selection to the books of English travellers, to a particular age, or to particular regions. Where the original is foreign, the work is given in English, fresh translations being made, except where it is possible to utilise the spirited renderings of the sixteenth or seventeenth century.

More than a hundred volumes have now been issued by the Society. The majority of these illustrate the history of the great age of discovery which forms the foundation of modern history. The discovery of AMERICA, and of particular portions of the two great western continents, is represented by the writings of COLUMBUS, AMERIGO VESPUCCI, CORTES and CHAMPLAIN, and by several of the early narratives from HAKLUYT'S collection. The works relating to the conquest of PERU, and to the condition of that country under the Incas, are numerous and of the highest value; similar interest attaches to STRACHEY'S *Virginia Britannia*, DE SOTO'S *Discovery of Florida*, and SIR ROBERT SCHOMBURGK'S edition of RALEIGH'S *Discoverie of Guiana*. The works relating to AFRICA already published comprise BARBOSA'S *Coasts of East Africa*, the *Portuguese Embassy to Abyssinia* of ALVAREZ, and *The Travels of Leo the Moor*. Notices of AUSTRALIA, INDIA, PERSIA, CHINA, JAPAN, etc., as they appeared in early times to European eyes, both before and after the discovery of the Cape route, are also included in the series, a well-known example being the work on *Cathay and the Way Thither*, contributed by a former President, SIR HENRY YULE. The search for the North-west and North-east Passages is recorded in the narratives of JENKINSON, DE VEER, FROBISHER, DAVIS, HUDSON, BAFFIN, etc.; whilst more extensive voyages are signalised by the great names of MAGELLAN, DRAKE, and HAWKINS.

The works selected by the Council for reproduction are printed (with rare exceptions) at full length. Each volume is placed in the charge of an editor especially competent—in many cases from personal acquaintance with the countries described—to give the reader such assistance as he needs for the elucidation of the text. Whenever possible, the interest of the volumes is increased by the addition of reproductions of contemporary portraits, maps, and other illustrations.

As these editorial services are rendered gratuitously, *the whole of the amount received from subscribers is expended in the preparation of the Society's publications*.

The subscription should be paid to the Society's Bankers on the 1st January in each year. This entitles the subscriber to receive, free of charge, the current publications of the Society. Usually three volumes are issued each year. Members have the sole privilege of purchasing sets of the previous publications; and the more recent of the Society's volumes are also reserved exclusively for its subscribers. In addition, they are allowed a special discount of 15 per cent. on the volumes permitted to be sold to the public. It may be mentioned that the publications of the Society tend to rise in value, and those which are out of print are now only to be obtained at high prices.

The present scale of charges for back volumes is as follows:—

TO MEMBERS.—*Sets of the* FIRST SERIES, omitting Nos. 1 to 10, 12, 19, 25, 36, 37, to be sold for . . . . *net* **£30.**

N.B.—*Most of the out-of-print volumes have been, or are being, reprinted as later volumes of the series.*

TO THE PUBLIC GENERALLY.—*A limited number of single copies* as follows:—

Nos. 23, 26, 29, 31, 34, 40, 47, 50, at	**8s. 6d.**
Nos. 21, 28, 30, 35, 46, 48, 51, 53, 55, 56, 58, 60 to 87, 90 to 100, at	**10s.**
Nos. 20, 27, 33, 38, 41 to 45, 49, 52, 57, 88, 89, at	**15s.**
Nos. 54 and 59, at	**20s.**

⁂ Subject in case of Members to a discount of 15%.

The volumes of the SECOND SERIES *can only be obtained by paying the arrears of subscription.*

A list of works in preparation is given at page 11. The Secretary will be happy to furnish any further information that may be desired.

Gentlemen desiring to be enrolled as members should send their names to the Secretary. Applications for back volumes should be addressed to MR. QUARITCH.

WORKS ALREADY ISSUED.

FIRST SERIES.

1—The Observations of Sir Richard Hawkins, Knt.,

In his Voyage into the South Sea in 1593. Reprinted from the edition of 1622, and edited by Capt. C. R. D. BETHUNE, R.N., C.B.
(First Edition out of print. See No. 57.) Issued for 1847.

2—Select Letters of Columbus,

With Original Documents relating to the Discovery of the New World. Translated and Edited by R. H. MAJOR.
(First Edition out of print. See No. 43.) Issued for 1847.

3—The Discovery of the Empire of Guiana.

By Sir Walter Ralegh, Knt. Edited by SIR ROBERT H. SCHOMBURGK, Ph.D.
(First Edition out of print. Second Edition in preparation.) Issued for 1848.

4—Sir Francis Drake his Voyage, 1595,

By Thomas Maynarde, together with the Spanish Account of Drake's attack on Puerto Rico. Edited by W. D. COOLEY.
(Out of print.) Issued for 1848.

5—Narratives of Early Voyages to the North-West.

Edited by THOMAS RUNDALL.
(Out of print.) *Issued for* 1849.

6—The Historie of Travaile into Virginia Britannia,

Expressing the Cosmographie and Commodities of the Country, together with the manners and customs of the people, collected by William Strachey, Gent., the first Secretary of the Colony. Edited by R. H. MAJOR.
(Out of print.) *Issued for* 1849.

7—Divers Voyages touching the Discovery of America

And the Islands adjacent, collected and published by Richard Hakluyt, Prebendary of Bristol, in the year 1582. Edited by JOHN WINTER JONES.
(Out of print.) *Issued for* 1850.

8—A Collection of Documents on Japan.

With a Commentary by THOMAS RUNDALL.
(Out of print.) *Issued for* 1850.

9—The Discovery and Conquest of Florida,

By Don Ferdinando de Soto. Translated out of Portuguese by Richard Hakluyt; and Edited by W. B. RYE.
(Out of print.) *Issued for* 1851.

10—Notes upon Russia,

Being a Translation from the Earliest Account of that Country, entitled Rerum Muscoviticarum Commentarii, by the Baron Sigismund von Herberstein, Ambassador from the Court of Germany to the Grand Prince Vasiley Ivanovich, in the years 1517 and 1526. Two Volumes. Translated and Edited by R. H. MAJOR. Vol. 1.
(Out of print.) *Issued for* 1851.

11—The Geography of Hudson's Bay,

Being the Remarks of Captain W. Coats, in many Voyages to that locality, between the years 1727 and 1751. With Extracts from the Log of Captain Middleton on his Voyage for the Discovery of the North-west Passage, in H.M.S. "Furnace," in 1741-2. Edited by JOHN BARROW, F.R.S., F.S.A.
Issued for 1852.

12—Notes upon Russia.

Vol. 2. *(Out of print.)* *Issued for* 1852.

13—Three Voyages by the North-East,

Towards Cathay and China, undertaken by the Dutch in the years 1594, 1595 and 1596, with their Discovery of Spitzbergen, their residence of ten months in Novaya Zemlya, and their safe return in two open boats. By Gerrit de Veer. Edited by C. T. BEKE, Ph.D., F.S.A.
(See also No. 54.) *Issued for* 1853.

14-15—The History of the Great and Mighty Kingdom of China and the Situation Thereof.

Compiled by the Padre Juan Gonzalez de Mendoza. Reprinted from the Early Translation of R. Parke, and Edited by SIR GEORGE T. STAUNTON, Bart. With an Introduction by R. H. MAJOR. 2 vols.
Issued for 1854.

16—The World Encompassed by Sir Francis Drake.

Being his next Voyage to that to Nombre de Dios. Collated with an unpublished Manuscript of Francis Fletcher, Chaplain to the Expedition. Edited by W. S. W. VAUX, M.A. *Issued for* 1855.

17—The History of the Tartar Conquerors who subdued China.
From the French of the Père D'Orleans, 1688. Translated and Edited by the Earl of Ellesmere. With an Introduction by R. H. Major.
Issued for 1855.

18—A Collection of Early Documents on Spitzbergen and Greenland.
Edited by Adam White. *Issued for* 1856.

19—The Voyage of Sir Henry Middleton to Bantam and the Maluco Islands.
From the rare Edition of 1606. Edited by Bolton Corney.
(*Out of print*). *Issued for* 1856.

20—Russia at the Close of the Sixteenth Century.
Comprising "The Russe Commonwealth" by Dr. Giles Fletcher, and Sir Jerome Horsey's Travels. Edited by E. A. Bond.
Issued for 1857.

21—The Travels of Girolamo Benzoni in America, in 1542-56.
Translated and Edited by Admiral W. H. Smyth, F.R.S., F.S.A.
Issued for 1857.

22—India in the Fifteenth Century.
Being a Collection of Narratives of Voyages to India in the century preceding the Portuguese discovery of the Cape of Good Hope; from Latin, Persian, Russian, and Italian Sources. Edited by R. H. Major.
Issued for 1858.

23—Narrative of a Voyage to the West Indies and Mexico,
In the years 1599-1602, with Maps and Illustrations. By Samuel Champlain. Translated from the original and unpublished Manuscript, with a Biographical Notice and Notes by Alice Wilmere. *Issued for* 1858.

24—Expeditions into the Valley of the Amazons
During the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries: containing the Journey of Gonzalo Pizarro, from the Royal Commentaries of Garcilasso Inca de la Vega; the Voyage of Francisco de Orellana, from the General History of Herrera; and the Voyage of Cristoval de Acuna. Translated and Edited by Clements R. Markham. *Issued for* 1859.

25—Early Indications of Australia.
A Collection of Documents shewing the Early Discoveries of Australia to the time of Captain Cook. Edited by R. H. Major.
(*Out of print.*) *Issued for* 1859.

26—The Embassy of Ruy Gonzalez de Clavijo to the Court of Timour, 1403-6.
Translated and Edited by Clements R. Markham.
Issued for 1860.

27—Henry Hudson the Navigator.
The Original Documents in which his career is recorded. Edited by George Asher, LL.D. *Issued for* 1860.

28—The Expedition of Ursua and Aguirre,
In search of El Dorado and Omagua, A.D. 1560-61. Translated from the "Sexta Noticia Historiale" of Fray Pedro Simon, by W. Bollaert, with an Introduction by Clements R. Markham.
Issued for 1861.

29—The Life and Acts of Don Alonzo Enriquez de Guzman.
Translated and Edited by Clements R. Markham.
Issued for 1862.

30—Discoveries of the World

From their first original unto the year of our Lord 1555. By Antonio Galvano. Reprinted, with the original Portuguese text, and edited by VICE-ADMIRAL BETHUNE, C.B. *Issued for* 1862.

31—Marvels described by Friar Jordanus,

From a parchment manuscript of the Fourteenth Century, in Latin. Edited by COLONEL H. YULE, C.B. *Issued for* 1863.

32—The Travels of Ludovico di Varthema

In Syria, Arabia, Persia, India, etc., during the Sixteenth Century. Translated by J. WINTER JONES, F.S.A., and Edited by the REV. GEORGE PERCY BADGER. *Issued for* 1863.

33—The Travels of Cieza de Leon in 1532-50

From the Gulf of Darien to the City of La Plata, contained in the first part of his Chronicle of Peru (Antwerp, 1554). Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM. *Issued for* 1864.

34—The Narrative of Pascual de Andagoya.

Containing the earliest notice of Peru. Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM. *Issued for* 1865.

35—The Coasts of East Africa and Malabar

In the beginning of the Sixteenth Century, by Duarte Barbosa. Translated from an early Spanish manuscript by the HON. HENRY STANLEY. *Issued for* 1865.

36-37—Cathay and the Way Thither.

A Collection of all minor notices of China, previous to the Sixteenth Century. Translated and Edited by COLONEL H. YULE, C.B. Two Vols. (*Out of print.*) *Issued for* 1866.

38—The Three Voyages of Sir Martin Frobisher.

With a Selection from Letters now in the State Paper Office. Edited by REAR-ADMIRAL COLLINSON, C.B. *Issued for* 1867.

39—The Philippine Islands,

Moluccas, Siam, Cambodia, Japan, and China, at the close of the 16th Century. By Antonia de Morga. Translated from the Spanish, with Notes, by the LORD STANLEY of Alderley. *Issued for* 1868.

40—The Fifth Letter of Hernan Cortes

To the Emperor Charles V., containing an Account of his Expedition to Honduras in 1525-26. Translated from the Spanish by DON PASCUAL DE GAYANGOS. *Issued for* 1868.

41—The Royal Commentaries of the Yncas.

By the Ynca Garcillasso de la Vega. Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM. Vol. I. *Issued for* 1869.

42—The Three Voyages of Vasco da Gama,

And his Viceroyalty, from the Lendas da India of Gaspar Correa; accompanied by original documents. Translated and Edited by the LORD STANLEY of Alderley. *Issued for* 1869.

43—Select Letters of Christopher Columbus,

With other Original Documents relating to his Four Voyages to the New World. Translated and Edited by R. H. MAJOR. 2nd Edition (see No. 2). *Issued for* 1870.

44—History of the Imâms and Seyyids of 'Omân,

By Salîl-Ibn-Razîk, from A.D. 661-1856. Translated from the original Arabic, and Edited, with a continuation of the History down to 1870, by the REV. GEORGE PERCY BADGER. *Issued for* 1870.

45—The Royal Commentaries of the Yncas.

Vol. 2. *Issued for* 1871.

46—The Canarian,

Or Book of the Conquest and Conversion of the Canarians in the year 1402, by Messire Jean de Bethencourt, Kt. Composed by Pierre Bontier and Jean le Verrier. Translated and Edited by R. H. MAJOR. *Issued for* 1871.

47—Reports on the Discovery of Peru.

Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B. *Issued for* 1872.

48—Narratives of the Rites and Laws of the Yncas.

Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. *Issued for* 1872.

49—Travels to Tana and Persia,

By Josafa Barbaro and Ambrogio Contarini; Edited by LORD STANLEY of Alderley. With Narratives of other Italian Travels in Persia. Translated and Edited by CHARLES GREY. *Issued for* 1873.

50—Voyages of the Zeni

To the Northern Seas in the Fourteenth Century. Translated and Edited by R. H. MAJOR. *Issued for* 1873.

51—The Captivity of Hans Stade of Hesse in 1547-55,

Among the Wild Tribes of Eastern Brazil. Translated by ALBERT TOOTAL, Esq., and annotated by SIR RICHARD F. BURTON. *Issued for* 1874.

52—The First Voyage Round the World by Magellan.

Translated from the Accounts of Pigafetta and other contemporary writers. Edited by LORD STANLEY of Alderley. *Issued for* 1874.

53—The Commentaries of the Great Afonso Dalboquerque,

Second Viceroy of India. Translated from the Portuguese Edition of 1774, and Edited by WALTER DE GRAY BIRCH, F.R.S.L. Vol. 1. *Issued for* 1875.

54—The Three Voyages of William Barents to the North-East.

Second Edition of Gerrit de Veer's Work. Edited by Lieut. KOOLEMANS BEYNEN, of the Royal Dutch Navy. *Issued for* 1876.

55—The Commentaries of the Great Afonso Dalboquerque.

Vol. 2. *Issued for* 1875.

56—The Voyages of Sir James Lancaster.

With Abstracts of Journals of Voyages preserved in the India Office, and the Voyage of Captain John Knight to seek the N.W. Passage. Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. *Issued for* 1877.

57—The Observations of Sir Richard Hawkins, Knt.,

In his Voyage into the South Sea in 1593, with the Voyages of his grandfather William, his father Sir John, and his cousin William Hawkins. Second Edition (see No. 1). Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. *Issued for* 1877.

58—The Bondage and Travels of Johann Schiltberger,

From his capture at the battle of Nicopolis in 1396 to his escape and return to Europe in 1427. Translated by Commander J. BUCHAN TELFER, R.N.; with Notes by Professor B. BRUUN. *Issued for* 1878.

59—The Voyages and Works of John Davis the Navigator.

Edited by Captain ALBERT H. MARKHAM, R.N. *Issued for* 1878.

The Map of the World, A.D. 1600.

Called by Shakspere "The New Map, with the Augmentation of the Indies." To illustrate the Voyages of John Davis. *Issued for* 1878.

60-61—The Natural and Moral History of the Indies.

By Father Joseph de Acosta. Reprinted from the English Translated Edition of Edward Grimston, 1604; and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. Two Vols. *Issued for* 1879.

Map of Peru.

To Illustrate Nos. 33, 41, 45, 60, and 61. *Issued for* 1879.

62—The Commentaries of the Great Afonso Dalboquerque.

Vol. 3. *Issued for* 1880.

63—The Voyages of William Baffin, 1612-1622.

Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. *Issued for* 1880.

64—Narrative of the Portuguese Embassy to Abyssinia

During the years 1520-1527. By Father Francisco Alvarez. Translated and Edited by LORD STANLEY of Alderley. *Issued for* 1881.

65—The History of the Bermudas or Somer Islands.

Attributed to Captain Nathaniel Butler. Edited by General Sir J. HENRY LEFROY, R.A., K.C.M.G. *Issued for* 1881.

66-67—The Diary of Richard Cocks,

Cape-Merchant in the English Factory in Japan, 1615-1622. Edited by EDWARD MAUNDE THOMPSON. Two Vols. *Issued for* 1882.

68—The Second Part of the Chronicle of Peru.

By Pedro de Cieza de Leon. Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. *Issued for* 1883.

69—The Commentaries of the Great Afonso Dalboquerque.

Vol. 4. *Issued for* 1883.

70-71—The Voyage of John Huyghen van Linschoten to the East Indies.

From the Old English Translation of 1598. The First Book, containing his Description of the East. Edited by A. C. BURNELL, Ph.D., C.I.E., and P. A. TIELE, of Utrecht. *Issued for* 1884.

72-73—Early Voyages and Travels to Russia and Persia,

By Anthony Jenkinson and other Englishmen, with some account of the first Intercourse of the English with Russia and Central Asia by way of the Caspian Sea. Edited by E. DELMAR MORGAN, and C. H. COOTE. *Issued for* 1885.

74-75—The Diary of William Hedges, Esq.,

Afterwards Sir William Hedges, during his Agency in Bengal; as well as on his Voyage out and Return Overland (1681-1687). Transcribed for the Press, with Introductory Notes, etc., by R. BARLOW, and Illustrated by copious Extracts from Unpublished Records, etc., by Col. Sir H. YULE, K.C.S.I., R.E., C.B., LL.D. Vols. 1 and 2. *Issued for* 1886.

76-77—The Voyage of François Pyrard to the East Indies,

The Maldives, the Moluccas and Brazil. Translated into English from the Third French Edition of 1619, and Edited by ALBERT GRAY, assisted by H. C. P. BELL. Vol. 1. Vol. 2, Part I.

Issued for 1887.

78—The Diary of William Hedges, Esq.

Vol. 3. Sir H. Yule's Extracts from Unpublished Records, etc.

Issued for 1888.

79—Tractatus de Globis, et eorum usu.

A Treatise descriptive of the Globes constructed by Emery Molyneux, and Published in 1592. By Robert Hues. Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. To which is appended,

Sailing Directions for the Circumnavigation of England,

And for a Voyage to the Straits of Gibraltar. From a Fifteenth Century MS. Edited by JAMES GAIRDNER; with a Glossary by E. DELMAR MORGAN. *Issued for* 1888.

80—The Voyage of François Pyrard to the East Indies, etc.

Vol. 2, Part II. *Issued for* 1889.

81—The Conquest of La Plata, 1535-1555.

I.—Voyage of Ulrich Schmidt to the Rivers La Plata and Paraguai. II.—The Commentaries of Alvar Nunez Cabeza de Vaca. Edited by DON LUIS L. DOMINGUEZ. *Issued for* 1889.

82-83—The Voyage of François Leguat

To Rodriguez, Mauritius, Java, and the Cape of Good Hope. Edited by Captain PASFIELD OLIVER. Two Vols.

Issued for 1890.

84-85—The Travels of Pietro della Valle to India.

From the Old English Translation of 1664, by G. Havers. Edited by EDWARD GREY. Two Vols. *Issued for* 1891.

86—The Journal of Christopher Columbus

During his First Voyage (1492-93), and Documents relating to the Voyages of John Cabot and Gaspar Corte Real. Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. *Issued for* 1892.

87—Early Voyages and Travels in the Levant.

I.—The Diary of Master Thomas Dallam, 1599-1600. II.—Extracts from the Diaries of Dr. John Covel, 1670-1679. With some Account of the Levant Company of Turkey Merchants. Edited by J. THEODORE BENT, F.S.A., F.R.G.S. *Issued for* 1892.

88-89—The Voyages of Captain Luke Foxe and Captain Thomas James

In Search of a N.-W. Passage, 1631-32; with Narratives of Earlier N.-W. Voyages. Edited by MILLER CHRISTY, F.L.S. Two Vols.

Issued for 1893.

90—The Letters of Amerigo Vespucci

And other Documents relating to his Career. Translated and Edited by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S. *Issued for* 1894.

91—The Voyage of Pedro Sarmiento to the Strait of Magellan, 1579-80.

Translated and Edited, with Illustrative Documents and Introduction, by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S.

Issued for 1894.

92-93-94—The History and Description of Africa,

And of the Notable Things Therein Contained. The Travels of Leo Africanus the Moor, from the English translation of John Pory (1600). Edited by ROBERT BROWN, M.A., Ph.D. Three Vols,

Issued for 1895.

95—The Discovery and Conquest of Guinea.

Written by Gomes Eannes de Azurara. Translated and Edited by C. RAYMOND BEAZLEY, M.A., and EDGAR PRESTAGE, B.A. Vol. 1.

Issued for 1896.

96-97—Danish Arctic Expeditions.

Book 1. The Danish Expeditions to Greenland, 1605-07; with James Hall's Voyage in 1612. Edited by C. C. A. GOSCH. *Issued for* 1896.

Book 2. Jens Munk's Voyage to Hudson's Bay in 1619-20. Edited by C. C. A. GOSCH. *Issued for* 1897.

98—The Topographia Christiana of Cosmas Indicopleustes.

Translated and Edited by J. W. MCCRINDLE, M.A., M.R.A.S.

Issued for 1897.

99—The First Voyage of Vasco da Gama.

Translated from the Portuguese, with an Introduction and Notes, by E. G. RAVENSTEIN. *Issued for* 1898.

100—The Discovery and Conquest of Guinea.

Written by Gomes Eannes de Azurara. Translated and Edited by C. RAYMOND BEAZLEY, M.A., and EDGAR PRESTAGE, B.A. Vol. 2.

Issued for 1898.

SECOND SERIES.

1-2—The Embassy of Sir Thomas Roe to the Court of the Great Mogul, 1615-19.

Edited from Contemporary Records by WILLIAM FOSTER, B.A.

Issued for 1899.

3—The Voyage of Sir Robert Dudley to the West Indies and Guiana in 1594.

Edited by GEO. F. WARNER, M.A., F.S.A., Assistant Keeper of Manuscripts, British Museum. *Issued for* 1899.

4—The Journeys of William of Rubruck and John of Pian de Carpine

To Tartary in the 13th century. Translated and Edited by the Hon. W. W. ROCKHILL. *Issued for* 1900.

5—The Voyage of Captain John Saris to Japan in 1613.

Edited by H. E. SIR ERNEST M. SATOW, K.C.M.G.

Issued for 1900.

6—The Strange Adventures of Andrew Battell of Leigh in Essex.

Edited by E. G. RAVENSTEIN. *Issued for* 1900.

7-8—The Voyage of Mendaña to the Solomon Islands in 1568.

Edited by the LORD AMHERST OF HACKNEY and BASIL H. THOMSON.

Issued for 1901.

OTHER WORKS UNDERTAKEN BY EDITORS.

The Principall Navigations of the English Nation. By RICHARD HAKLUYT. From the edition of 1598-1600. To be issued in about ten volumes.

Raleigh's Empire of Guiana. Second Edition (see No. 3). Edited, with Notes, etc., by EVERARD F. IM THURN, C.B., C.M.G.

The Voyages of Cadamosto, the Venetian, along the West Coast of Africa, in the years 1455 and 1456. Translated from the earliest Italian text of 1507, and Edited by H. YULE OLDHAM, M.A., F.R.G.S.

Dr. John Fryer's New Account of East India and Persia (1698). Edited by ARTHUR T. PRINGLE.

The Expedition of Hernan Cortes to Honduras in 1525-26. Second Edition (see No. 40), with added matter. Translated and Edited by A. P. MAUDSLAY.

The Letters of Pietro Della Valle from Persia, &c. Translated and Edited by MAJOR M. NATHAN, C.M.G., R.E.

The Journey of Pedro Teixeira from India to Italy by land, 1604-05; with his Chronicle of the Kings of Ormus. Translated and Edited by W. F. SINCLAIR, late I.C.S.

The Travels of Peter Mundy in India, 1628-34. Edited from an unpublished MS. by COLONEL R. C. TEMPLE, C.I.E.

Thomas Herbert's Description of the Persian Monarchy. Edited by Major P. MOLESWORTH SYKES.

The Voyage of Robert Harcourt to Guiana in 1609-10. Edited by G. F. WARNER, M.A., F.S.A.

The Portuguese Expedition to Abyssinia in 1541, as narrated by Castanhoso and Bermudez. Edited by R. S. WHITEWAY, late I.C.S.

LAWS OF THE HAKLUYT SOCIETY.

I. The object of this Society shall be to print, for distribution among its members, rare and valuable Voyages, Travels, Naval Expeditions, and other geographical records, from an early period to the beginning of the eighteenth century.

II. The Annual Subscription shall be One Guinea (for America, five dollars, U.S. currency), payable in advance on the 1st January.

III. Each member of the Society, having paid his Subscription, shall be entitled to a copy of every work produced by the Society, and to vote at the general meetings within the period subscribed for; and if he do not signify, before the close of the year, his wish to resign, he shall be considered as a member for the succeeding year.

IV. The management of the Society's affairs shall be vested in a Council consisting of twenty-two members, viz., a President, two Vice-Presidents, a Treasurer, a Secretary, and seventeen ordinary members, to be elected annually; but vacancies occurring between the general meetings shall be filled up by the Council.

V. A General Meeting of the Subscribers shall be held annually. The Secretary's Report on the condition and proceedings of the Society shall be then read, and the meeting shall proceed to elect the Council for the ensuing year.

VI. At each Annual Election, three of the old Council shall retire.

VII. The Council shall meet when necessary for the dispatch of business, three forming a quorum, including the Secretary; the Chairman having a casting vote.

VIII. Gentlemen preparing and editing works for the Society, shall receive twenty-five copies of such works respectively.

LIST OF MEMBERS.

1901.

Aberdare, The Right Hon. Lord, Longwood, Winchester.
Adelaide Public Library, per Messrs. Kegan Paul, Trench, Trübner & Co.
Admiralty, The (2 *copies*), per Messrs. Eyre and Spottiswoode.
Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, per Mr. Eccles, 96, Great Russell-street.
Alexander, W. L., Esq., Pinkieburn, Musselburgh, N.B.
All Souls College, Oxford.
American Geographical Society, 11, West 29th-street, New York City, U.S.A.
Amherst, of Hackney, The Right Hon. Lord, Didlington Hall, Brandon, Norfolk.
Antiga Casa Bertrand (Senhor José Bastos), 73, Rua Garrett, Lisbon.
Antiquaries, the Society of, Burlington House, Piccadilly, W.
Armitage-Smith, Sydney, Esq., Admiralty, S.W.
Army and Navy Club, 36, Pall-mall.
Athenæum Club, Pall Mall.
Atkinson, Dr. Roger T., U.S. Navy, Wakefield, Massachusetts, U.S.A.

Baer, Joseph & Co., Messrs., per Messrs. Epstein, 47, Holborn Viaduct, E.C.
Bain, Mr., 1, Haymarket, S.W.
Baldwin, A., Esq., M.P., Wilden House, near Stourport.
Ball, John B., Esq., Ashburton Cottage, Putney Heath, S.W.
Barclay, Hugh G., Esq., Colney Hall, Norwich.
Basset, M. René, Correspondant de l'Institut de France, Directeur de l'Ecole supérieure des lettres d'Alger, L'Agha 77, rue Michelet, Alger-Mustapha.
Baxter, James Phinney, Esq., 61, Deering-street, Portland, Maine, U.S.A.
Beaumont, Rear-Admiral L. A., 3, Sloane-gardens, S.W.
Beazley, C. Raymond, Esq., 13, The Paragon, Blackheath, S.E.
Belfast Linen Hall Library, Donegall-square North, Belfast (Geo. Smith, Esq., [Librarian.
Belhaven and Stenton, Col. the Lord, R.E., 41, Lennox gardens, S.W.
Bennett, R. A., Esq., 40, Harborne Road, Edgbaston.
Berlin Geographical Society, per Messrs. Sampson Low.
Berlin, the Royal Library of, per Messrs. Asher and Co.
Berlin University, Geographical Institute of (Baron von Richthofen), 6, Schinkelplatz, Berlin, W., per Messrs. Sampson Low.
Birch, Dr. W. de G., British Museum.
Birmingham Central Free Library, Ratcliff-place, Birmingham.
Birmingham Old Library (The), Birmingham.
Board of Education, South Kensington, S.W.
Bodleian Library, Oxford *(copies presented)*.
Bonaparte, H. H. Prince Roland, 10, Avenue d'Jéna, Paris.
Borradaile, A. A., Esq., 44, Victoria Road, Kensington, W.
Boston Athenæum Library, U.S.A., per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Boston Public Library, per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Maine, U.S.A., per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Bower, Major Hamilton, per Messrs. Grindlay & Co., 54, Parliament Street.
Bowring, Thos. B., Esq., 7, Palace Gate, Kensington, W.
Brewster, Charles O., Esq., University Club, New York City, U.S.A.
Brighton Public Library.
Brine, Vice-Admiral Lindesay.
British Guiana Royal Agricultural and Commercial Society, Georgetown, [Demerara.
British Museum *(copies presented)*.
Brock, Robert C. H., Esq., 1612, Walnut-street, Philadelphia.
Brodrick, Hon. G., Merton College, Oxford.
Brooke, Thos., Esq., Armitage Bridge, Huddersfield.
Brookline Public Library, Mass., U.S.A.
Brooklyn Mercantile Library, per Messrs. Allen & Murray.

Brown, Arthur W. W., Esq., 37, Evelyn Mansions, Carlisle-place, Victoria-street, S.W.
Brown, General J. Marshall, 218, Middle-street, Portland, Maine, U.S.A.
Brown, H. T., Esq., Roodeye House, Chester.
Brown, J. Allen, Esq., J.P., 7, Kent-gardens, Ealing.
Brown University, Providence, Rhode Island (H. L. Koopman, Librarian).
Bruce, A. M., Esq., 2, Polwarth-terrace, Edinburgh.
Buda-Pesth, the Geographical Institute of the University of.
Bunting, W. L. Esq., The Steps, Bromsgrove.
Burgess, Jas., Esq., C.I.E., LL.D., 22, Seton-place, Edinburgh.
Burns, Capt. J. W., Kilmahew, Cardross, Dumbartonshire.
Buxton, E. North, Esq., Knighton, Buckhurst-hill.

Cambray & Co., Messrs., 6, Hastings-street, Calcutta.
Cambridge University Library, per Mr. Eccles, 16, Great James Street.
Canada, The Parliament Library, per Messrs. Allen & Murray.
Cardiff Public Library, Cardiff (J. Ballinger, Esq., Librarian).
Carles, W. R., Esq., C.M.G., Vines Close, Wimborne.
Carlton Club, Pall-mall.
Carlisle, The Rt. Hon. the Earl of, Naworth Castle, Bampton, Cumberland.
Carnegie Library, Pittsburgh, U.S.A., per Mr. Stechert.
Chamberlain, Right Hon. Joseph, M.P., 40, Princes-gardens, S.W.
Chambers, Commander B. M., R.N.
Chetham's Library, Hunt's Bank, Manchester.
Chicago Public Library, per Messrs. Stevens and Brown.
Christ Church, Oxford.
Christiania University Library, c/o Messrs. T. Bennett and Sons, Christiania per Messrs. Cassell and Co., Ludgate Hill.
Church, Col. G. Earl, 216, Cromwell-road, S.W.
Cincinnati Public Library, Ohio, U.S.A.
Clark, J. W., Esq., Scroope House, Trumpington-street, Cambridge.
Colgan, Nathaniel, Esq., 15, Breffin-terrace, Sandycove, co. Dublin.
Colonial Office (The), Downing-street, S.W.
Constable, Archibald, Esq., India.
Conway, Sir W. Martin, The Red House, Hornton-street, W.
Cooper, Lieut.-Col. E. H., 42, Portman-square, W.
Copenhagen Royal Library, c/o Messrs. Lehman and Stage, Copenhagen, per Messrs. Sampson Low.
Cora, Professor Guido, M.A., Via Goito, 2, Rome.
Cornell University, per Messrs. Allen & Murray.
Corning, C. R., Esq. }
Corning, H. K., Esq. } c/o Messrs. Bickers & Son, 1, Leicester-square, W.
Cortissoz, Royal, Esq., Editorial Room, *New York Tribune*, New York, U.S.A.
Cow, J., Esq., Elfinsward, Hayward's Heath.
Cruising Club, The, 40, Chancery Lane, W.C.
Cunningham, Lieut.-Col. G., Junior U.S. Club, Charles-street, S.W.
Curzon of Kedleston, H.E. the Right Hon. Lord, Government House, Calcutta.

Dalton, Rev. Canon J. N., M.A., C.M.G., The Cloisters, Windsor.
Dampier, G. R., Esq., I.C.S., Gillingham Rectory, Beccles.
Danish Royal Naval Library, per Messrs. Sampson Low (Foreign Dept.).
Davis, Hon. N. Darnell, C.M.G., Georgetown, Demerara, British Guiana.
De Bertodano, B., Esq., 22, Chester-terrace, Regent's-park, N.W.
Derby, The Earl of, c/o the Rev. J. Richardson, Knowsley, Prescot.
Detroit Public Library, Michigan, U.S.A.
Dijon University Library, Rue Monge, Dijon.
Doubleday, H. Arthur, Esq., 2, Whitehall-gardens, S.W.
Dresden Geographical Society, per Herr P. E. Richter, Kleine Brüdergasse, 11, Dresden.

Ducie, The Right Hon. Earl of, F.R.S., Tortworth Court, Falfield.
Dulau and Co., Messrs., 37, Soho-square, W.

Eames, Wilberforce, Esq., Lenox Library, 890, Fifth-avenue, New York, U.S.A., per Mr. B. F. Stevens.
Edinburgh Public Library.
Edwards, Francis, Esq., 83, High-street, Marylebone, W.
Ellsworth, James W., Esq., 2, West 16th Street, New York, U.S.A.

Faber, Reginald S., Esq., 90, Regent's Park-road, N.W.
Fanshawe, Admiral Sir Edw., G.C.B., 74, Cromwell-road, S.W.
Fellows Athenæum, per Messrs. Kegan Paul, Trench, Trübner, & Co.
Ferguson, D. W., Esq., 5, Bedford-place, Croydon.
Ferguson, David, Esq., M.I.M.E., 140, Hyndland-drive, Kelvinside, Glasgow.
Fisher, Arthur, Esq., St. Aubyn's, Tiverton, Devon.
Fitzgerald, Edward A., Esq., per Mr. Jas. Bain, 1, Haymarket, S.W.
Foreign Office (The), per Messrs. Eyre and Spottiswoode.
Foreign Office of Germany, Berlin, per Messrs. Asher and Co.
Forrest, G. W., Esq., C.I.E., The Knowle, Brenchley, Kent.
Foster, William, Esq., India Office, S.W.
Fothergill, M. B., Esq., c/o Imperial Bank of Persia, Bushire, Persian Gulf, *viâ* Bombay.
French, H. B., Esq., 429, Arch Street, Philadelphia, U.S.A.

Georg, Mons. H., Lyons, per Messrs. Sampson Low.
George, C. W., Esq., 51, Hampton-road, Bristol.
Gill, J. Withers, Esq., 109 Box, Bulawayo, South Africa.
Gill, W. Harrison, Esq., c/o Messrs. C. A. & H. Nichols, Peninsular House, Monument-street, E.C.
Gladstone Library, National Liberal Club, Whitehall-place, S.W.
Glasgow University Library, per Mr. Billings, 59, Old Bailey, E.C.
Godman, F. Ducane, Esq., D.C.L., F.R.S., 10, Chandos-street, Cavendish-square, W.
Gosch, C. A., Esq., 21, Stanhope-gardens, S.W.
Gosling, F. Goodwin, Esq., Hamilton, Bermuda.
Gosset, General M. W. E., C.B., Westgate House, Dedham, Essex.
Göttingen University Library, per Messrs. Asher and Co.
Graham, Michael, Esq., *Glasgow Herald*, Glasgow.
Grant-Duff, Rt. Hon. Sir M. E., G.C.S.I., 11, Chelsea Embankment, S.W.
Gray, Albert, Esq., Catherine Lodge, Trafalgar Square, Chelsea, S.W.
Gray, M. H., Esq., India-rubber Company, Silvertown, Essex.
Greever, C. O., Esq., 1345, East Ninth-street, Des Moines, Iowa.
Griffiths, John G., Esq., 21, Palace Court, Kensington Gardens, S.W.
Grosvenor Library, Buffalo, U.S.A.
Gruzevski, C. L., Esq., 107, College Street, San Antonio, Texas, U.S.A.
Guildhall Library, E.C.
Guillemard, Arthur G., Esq., Eltham, Kent.
Guillemard, F. Henry H., Esq., M.A., M.D., The Old Mill House, Trumpington, Cambridge.

Hamburg Commerz-Bibliothek, c/o Herrn Friederichsen and Co., Hamburg, per Messrs. Drolenvaux and Bremner, 36, Gt. Tower-street, E.C.
Hamilton, W. P., Esq., 32 East 36th Street, New York City.
Hannen, The Hon. H., Holne Cott, Ashburton, South Devon.
Harmsworth, A. C., Esq., Elmwood, St. Peter's, Kent.
Harvard College, Cambridge, Massachusetts, per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Harvie-Brown, J. A., Esq., Donipace, Larbert, Stirlingshire, N.B.
Haswell, Geo. H., Esq., Ashleigh, Hamstead Road, Handsworth, Birmingham.
Hawkesbury, The Rt. Hon. Lord, 2, Carlton House-terrace, S.W.
Heawood, Edward, Esq., M.A., F.R.G.S., 3, Underhill-road, Lordship-lane, S.E.
Hervey, Dudley F. A., Esq., C.M.G., Westfields, Aldeburgh.
Hiersemann, Herr Karl W., 3, Königsstrasse, Leipzig, per Mr. Young T. Pentland, 38, West Smithfield, E.C.

Hippisley, A. E., Esq., c/o J. D. Campbell, Esq., C.M.G., 26, Old Queen-st., S.W.
Hobhouse, C. E. H., Esq., The Ridge, Corsham, Wilts.
Horner, J. F. Fortescue, Esq., Mells Park, Frome, Somersetshire, per Mr. J. Bain.
Hoskins, Admiral Sir Anthony H., G.C.B., 17, Montagu-square, W. (*deceased*).
Hoyt Public Library, per Messrs. Sotheran and Co., 140, Strand.
Hubbard, Hon. Gardiner G., 1328, Connecticut-avenue, Washington, D.C.
Hügel, Baron A. von, Curator, University Museum, Cambridge.
Hull Public Library (W. F. Lawton, Esq., Librarian).
Hull Subscription Library, per Messrs. Foster, Fore-street.

Im Thurn, E. F., Esq., C.B., C.M.G., 23, Edwardes-square, Kensington, W.
India Office (20 *copies*).
Ingle, W. Brouncker, Esq., 4, Orchard-road, Blackheath, S.E.
Inner Temple, Hon. Society of the (J. E. L. Pickering, Esq., Librarian).
Ireland, Prof. Alleyne, c/o Dr. E. E. Thorpe, 711, Boylston-st., Boston, Mass.

James, Arthur C., Esq., 92, Park-avenue, New York, U.S.A.
James, Walter B., Esq., M.D., 17, West 54th-street, New York.
John Carter Brown Library, Providence, per Messrs. Ellis and Elvey, 29, New Bond Street, W.
Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, U.S.A., per Messrs. Allen & Murray.
Johnson, General Sir Allen B., K.C.B., 60, Lexham-gardens, Cromwell-road,
Johnson, Rev. S. J., F.R.A.S., Melplash Vicarage, Bridport. [S.W.

Kearton, G. J. Malcolm, Esq., F.R.G.S., 28 Fenchurch Street, E.C.
Keltie, J. Scott, Esq., LL.D., 1, Savile-row, W.
Kelvin, The Rt. Hon. Lord, F.R.S., LL.D., 15, Eaton-place, S.W.
Key, John J., Esq., Colorado Springs, Colorado, U.S.A.
Kiel, Royal University of, per Messrs. Asher.
Kinder, C. W., Esq., C.M.G., Tongshan, North China.
King's Inns Library, Henrietta-street, Dublin.
Kimberley Public Library, per Messrs. Sotheran and Co., Strand.
Kitching, J., Esq., Oaklands, Kingston Hill, S.W.
Klincksieck, M., per Mr. Wohlleben, 45, Gt. Russell-street, W.C. (3 *copies*).

Langton, J. J. P., Esq., B.A., 802, Spruce Street, St. Louis, Mo., U.S.A.
Larchmont Yacht Club, Larchmont, N.Y., U.S.A. (F. D. Shaw, Esq., Chairman of Library Committee).
Leechman, C. B., Esq., 10, Earl's-court-gardens, S.W.
Leeds Library, Commercial-street, Leeds.
Lehigh University, U.S.A.
Leipzig, Library of the University of, per Herr O. Harrassowitz, Leipzig (Messrs. W. Wesley and Son).
Levy, Judah, Esq., 17, Greville-place, N.W.
Liverpool Free Public Library.
Liverpool Geographical Society (Capt. D. Phillips, R.N., Secretary), 14, Hargreaves-buildings, Chapel-street, Liverpool.
Loescher, Messrs. J., & Co., Via del Corso, 307, Rome, per Messrs. Sampson Low.
Logan, Daniel, Esq., Solicitor-General, Penang, Straits Settlements.
Logan, William, Esq., per Messrs. Grindlay & Co., 54, Parliament-street.
London Institution, Finsbury-circus.
London Library, 12, St. James's-square.
Long Island Historical Society, Brooklyn, U.S.A.
Lowrey, Joseph, Esq., The Hermitage, Loughton.
Lubetsky, S. A. S. le Prince Droutskoy, 89, Rue Miromesnil, Paris.
Lucas, C. P., Esq., C.B., Colonial Office, S.W.
Lucas, F. W., Esq., 21, Surrey-street, Victoria Embankment, W.C.
Luyster, S. B., Esq., c/o Messrs. Denham & Co., 109, Southampton-row, W.C.
Lydenberg, H. M., Esq., Lenox Library, Fifth Avenue, New York.
Lyttelton-Annesley, Lieut.-Gen. A., Templemere, Weybridge.

Macmillan & Bowes, Messrs., Cambridge, per Messrs. Foster, Fore-street.
Macqueen, John, Esq., St. Mary's, Harpenden,
Macrae, C. C., Esq., 93, Onslow-gardens, S.W.
Manchester Public Free Libraries.
Manierre, George, Esq., 184, La Salle-street, Chicago, Ill., U.S.A.
Margesson, Lieut. W. H. D., R.N., Findon Place, Worthing.
Markham, Vice-Admiral Albert H., Admiralty House, Sheerness.
Markham, Sir Clements, K.C.B., F.R.S., 21, Eccleston-square, S.W.
Marquand, Henry, Esq., 160, Broadway, New York, U.S.A.
Martelli, E. W., Esq., 4, New Square, Lincoln's Inn, W.C.
Massachusetts Historical Society, 30, Tremont-street, Boston, Mass., U.S.A., [per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Massie, Capt. R. H., R.A.
Mathers, E. P., Esq., Glenalmond, Foxgrove-road, Beckenham.
Maudslay, A. P., Esq., 32, Montpelier-square, Knightsbridge, S.W.
McClymont, Jas. R., Esq., c/o W. McClymont, Esq., LL.B., 103, Morningside-drive, Edinburgh, N.B.
McKerrow, R. B., Esq., 22, Friars' Stile-road, Richmond, Surrey.
Mecredy, Jas., Esq., M.A., B.L., F.R.G.S., Wynberg, Stradbrook, Blackrock, Dublin Co.
Melbourne, Public Library of, per Messrs. Melville & Mullen, 12, Ludgate-[square, E.C.
Merriman, J. A., Esq., c/o Standard Bank, Durban, Natal.
Meyjes, A. C., Esq., 42, Cannon-street, E.C.
Michell, Lewis W., Esq., Standard Bank of South Africa, Cape Town.
Michigan, University of, per Messrs. H. Sotheran & Co., 140, Strand, W.C.
Milwaukee Public Library, Wisconsin, per Mr. G. E. Stechert.
Minneapolis Athenæum, U.S.A., per Mr. G. E. Stechert, 2, Star-yard, W.C.
Mitchell Library, 21, Miller-street, Glasgow.
Mitchell, Alfred, Esq., per Messrs. Tiffany, 221, Regent-street, W.
Mitchell, Wm., Esq., c/o Union Bank of Scotland, Holburn Branch, Aberdeen.
Monson, The Rt. Hon. Lord, C.V.O., Clarence House, St. James's, S.W.
Morel, E. D., Esq., 9, Kirby-park, West Kirby, Cheshire.
Morgan, E. Delmar, Esq., 15, Roland-gardens, South Kensington, S.W.
Morris, H. C. L., Esq., M.D., Gothic Cottage, Bognor, Sussex.
Morris, Mowbray, Esq., 59A, Brook-street, Grosvenor square, W.
Morrison, G. E., Esq., M.D., F.R.G.S., *Times* Correspondent, Peking.
Moxon, A. E., Esq., c/o Mrs. Gough, The Lodge, Sculdern, near Banbury.
Mukhopadhyay, The Hon. Dr. Asutosh, M.A., LL.D., etc., etc., 77, Russa-road North, Bhowanipore, Calcutta.
Munich Royal Library, per Messrs. Asher & Co.
Murray, Hon. Charles G., c/o Bachelors' Club, 7, Hamilton-place, W.

Nathan, Major, C.M.G., R.E., 11, Pembridge-square, W.
Naval and Military Club, 94, Piccadilly, W.
Netherlands, Geographical Society of the, per Mr. Nutt, 57, Long Acre.
Newberry Library, The, Chicago, U.S.A., per Messrs. Stevens & Brown.
Newcastle-upon-Tyne Literary and Scientific Institute.
Newcastle-upon-Tyne Public Library.
New London Public Library, Conn., U.S.A.
New York Athletic Club, Central Park, South, New York (John C. Gulick, Esq., chairman of Library Committee).
New York Public Library, per Messrs. Stevens & Brown.
New York State Library, per Mr. G. E. Stechert, 2, Star-yard, Carey-st., W.C.
New York Yacht Club (Library Committee), 67, Madison-avenue, New York City, U.S.A.
New Zealand, Agent-General for, per Messrs. Sotheran & Co.
Nicholson, Sir Charles, Bart., D.C.L., The Grange, Totteridge, Herts.
Nijhoff, M., per Mr. D. Nutt, 57, Long Acre, W.C.
Nordenskiold, Baron, 11, Tradgardsgatan, Stockholm.
North Adams Public Library, Massachusetts, U.S.A.
Northbrook, The Right Hon. the Earl of, G.C.S.I., Stratton, Micheldever [Station.

Northumberland, His Grace the Duke of, K.G., c/o J. C. Hodgson, Esq., Alnwick Castle.

O'Byrne, P. Justin, Esq., "British-Indian Commerce," 21, St. Helen's-place, E.C.
Oliver, Captain S. P., Findon, near Worthing.
Oliver, Commander T. W., R.N., 16, De Parys-avenue, Bedford.
Omaha Public Library, Nebraska, U.S.A.
Ommanney, Admiral Sir Erasmus, C.B., F.R.S., 29, Connaught-sq., Hyde Park.
Oriental Club, Hanover-square, W.

Parish, Frank, Esq., 5, Gloucester Square, Hyde Park, W.
Parlett, H. G., Esq., British Legation, Tokio, Japan.
Payne, E. J., Esq., 2, Stone Buildings, Lincoln's Inn, W.C.
Peabody Institute, Baltimore, U.S., per Messrs. Allen & Murray.
Peckover, Alexander, Esq., Bank House, Wisbech.
Peech, W. H., Esq., St. Stephen's Club, Westminster.
Peek, Sir Cuthbert E., Bart., 22, Belgrave-square, S.W. (*deceased*).
Peixoto, Dr. J. Rodrigues, 8, Rue Almte. Comandaré, Rio de Janeiro.
Pequot Library, Southport, Conn., U.S.A.
Petherick, E. A., Esq., 85, Hopton-road, Streatham, S.W.
Philadelphia Free Library, U.S.A., per Mr. G. E. Stechert, 2, Star-yard, W.C.
Philadelphia, Library Company of, U.S.A., per Messrs. Allen & Murray.
Poor, F. B., Esq., 160, Broadway, New York, U.S.A.
Poor, Henry W., Esq., per Messrs. Denham & Co., 109, Southampton-row, W.C.
Portico Library, Manchester.
Pringle, Arthur T., Esq., c/o Messrs. G. W. Wheatley & Co., 10, Queen-st., E.C.
Plymouth Proprietary Library, Cornwall Street, Plymouth. (J. Brooking-Rowe, Esq., Hon. Sec.)

Quaritch, Mr. B., 15, Piccadilly, W. (12 *copies*).

Rabbits, W. Thos., Esq., 6, Cadogan Gardens, S.W.
Raffles Library, Singapore, per Messrs. Jones & Evans, Queen-street, E.C.
Ravenstein, E. G., Esq., 2, York Mansions, Battersea Park, S.W.
Reform Club, Pall-mall.
Reggio, André C., Esq., c/o Messrs. Baring Bros. & Co., 8, Bishopsgate-street Within, E.C.
Rhodes, Josiah, Esq., The Elms, Lytham, Lancashire.
Richards, Admiral Sir F. W., G.C.B., 13, Great Russell Mansions, W.C.
Riggs, E. F., Esq., 1311, Mass. Avenue, Washington, U.S.
Ringwalt, John S., Jun., Esq., Mt. Vernon, Knox County, Ohio, U.S.A.
Rittenhouse Club, 1811, Walnut-street, Philadelphia, U.S.A.
Rockhill, H.E. the Hon. W. W., Department of State, Washington.
Rodd, Sir Rennell, C.B., K.C.M.G., c/o Foreign Office, Downing-street, S.W.
Röhrscheid and Ebbecke, Herrn, Strauss'sche Buchhandlung, Bonn.
Rose, C. D., Esq., 10, Austin Friars, E.C.
Rosenheim, H., Esq., 62, Fitzjohn's Avenue, N.W.
Royal Artillery Institute, Woolwich.
Royal Colonial Institute, Northumberland Avenue, W.C.
Royal Engineers' Institute, Chatham.
Royal Geographical Society, 1, Savile-row, W. (*copies presented*).
Royal Scottish Geographical Society, Edinburgh (Jas. Burgess, Esq., LL.D., C.I.E., Librarian).
Royal Societies Club, St. James's-street, S.W.
Royal United Service Institution, Whitehall, S.W.
Runciman, Walter, Jr., Esq., 11, Windsor Terrace, Newcastle-on-Tyne.
Russell, Lady A., 2, Audley-square, W.
Ryley, J. Horton, Esq., } Melrose, Woodwarde-road, Dulwich, S.E.
Ryley, Mrs. Florence, LL.A., }

St. Andrew's University.
St. Deiniol's Library, Hawarden (Rev. G. C. Joyce, Librarian).
St. John's, N. B., Canada, Free Public Library (J. R. Ruel, Esq., Chairman).
St. Louis Mercantile Library, per Mr. G. E. Stechert, 2, Star-yard, W.C.
St. Martin's-in-the-Fields Free Public Library, 115, St. Martin's-lane, W.C.
St. Petersburg University Library, per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
St. Wladimir University, Kief, per Messrs. Sotheran & Co., 140, Strand.
Sanford, Chas. H., Esq., 102, Eaton Square, S.W.
San Francisco Public Library, per Mr. G. E. Stechert.
Satow, H. E. Sir E., K.C.M.G., British Legation, Peking.
Saunders, Howard, Esq., 7, Radnor-place, Gloucester-square, W.
SAXE COBURG AND GOTHA, H.R.H. THE DUKE OF, Clarence House, St. James's.
Schwartz, J. L., Esq., P.O. Box 594, Pittsburg, Pa.
Sclater, Dr. W. L., South African Museum, Cape of Good Hope.
Seawanhaka Corinthian Yacht Club, 7, East 32nd-street, New York, U.S.A.
Seymour, Admiral Sir E. H., G.C.B., 9, Ovington-square, S.W.
Sheffield Free Public Libraries (Samuel Smith, Esq., Librarian).
Shields, Cuthbert, Esq., Corpus Christi College, Oxford.
Signet Library, Edinburgh (Thos. G. Law, Esq., Librarian).
Silver, S. W., Esq., 3, York-gate, Regent's Park, N.W.
Sinclair, Mrs., 102, Cheyne-walk, Chelsea.
Smith, F. A., Esq., Thorncliff, Shoot-up-Hill, N.
Smithers, F.O., Esq., F.R.G.S., Dashwood House, 9, New Broad-street, E.C.
Sneddon, Geo. T., Esq., 8, Merry-street, Motherwell.
Societá Geografica Italiana, Rome.
Société de Géographie, Paris, per Mr. J. Arnould, Royal Mint Refinery, Royal Mint-street, E.C.
Sotheran and Co., Messrs., 140, Strand, W.C.
South African Public Library, per Messrs. H. S. King & Co., 65, Cornhill, E.C.
Southam, H. R. H., Esq., F.S.A., Innellan, Shrewsbury.
Springfield City Library Association, Mass., U.S.A.
Stairs, James W., Esq., c/o Messrs. Stairs, Son and Morrow, Halifax, Nova Scotia.
Stanley, Right Hon. Lord, of Alderley, 15, Grosvenor-gardens, S.W.
Stephens, Henry C., Esq., M.P., Chalderton, Salisbury.
Stevens, J. Tyler, Esq., Park-street, Lowell, Mass., U.S.A.
Stevens, Son, & Stiles, Messrs., 39, Great Russell-street, W.C.
Stockholm, Royal Library of, per Messrs. Sampson Low.
Stockton Public Library, per Messrs. Sotheran & Co., 140, Strand.
Strachey, Lady, 69, Lancaster-gate, Hyde-park, W.
Stride, Mrs. Arthur L., Bush Hall, Hatfield, Herts.
Stringer, G. A., Esq,, 248, Georgia-street, Buffalo, N.Y., U.S.A.
Stubbs, Captain Edward, R.N., 13, Greenfield-road, Stoneycroft, Liverpool.
Sydney Free Library, per Mr. Young J. Pentland, 38, West Smithfield, E.C.
Sykes, Major P. Molesworth, H.M.'s Consul at Kerman, Persia, *viâ* Tehran.

Tangye, R. T. G., Esq., Coombe Regis, Kington-on-Thames.
Tate, G. P., Esq., c/o Messrs. W. Watson & Co., Karachi, India.
Taylor, Captain William R., 1, Daysbrook-road, Streatham Hill, S.W.
Temple, Lieut.-Col. R. C., C.I.E., per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Thin, Mr. Jas., 54, 55, South Bridge, Edinburgh, per Mr. Billings, 59, Old Bailey, E.C.
Thomson, B. H., Esq., Governor's House, H.M.'s Prison, Northampton.
Tighe, W. S., Coalmoney, Stratford-on-Slaney, Co. Wicklow.
Toronto Public Library. }
Toronto University. } per Messrs. Cazenove & Son.
Transvaal State Library, Pretoria, Transvaal, South Africa, per Messrs. Mudie.
Travellers' Club, 106, Pall-mall, S.W.
Trinder, A., Esq., The Hollies, Rydens-road, Walton-on-Thames.
Trinder, H. W., Esq., Northbrook House, Bishops Waltham, Hants.
Trinder, Oliver Jones, Esq., Mount Vernon, Caterham, Surrey.

Trinity College, Cambridge, c/o Messrs. Deighton, Bell & Co., per Sutton.
Trinity House, The Hon. Corporation of, Tower-hill, E.C.
Troop, W. H., Esq., c/o Messrs. Black Bros. & Co., Halifax, Nova Scotia.
Trotter, Coutts, Esq., Athenæum Club, S.W.
Trübner, Herr Karl, Strasburg, per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Turnbull, Alex. H., Esq., 7, St. Helen's-place, Bishopsgate-street, E.C.

Union League Club, Broad-street, Philadelphia, U.S.A.
Union Society, Oxford.
United States Congress, Library of, per Messrs. Allen & Murray.
United States National Museum (Library of), per Messrs. W. Wesley & Son, 28, Essex-street, W.C.
United States Naval Academy Library, per Messrs. Stevens & Brown.
University of London, per Messrs. Sotheran & Co., 37, Piccadilly, W.
Upsala University Library, per C. J. Lundstrom, Upsala.

Van Raalte, Charles, Esq., Brownsea Island, Poole, Dorset.
Vernon, R. V., Esq., Colonial Office, S.W.
Vienna Imperial Library, per Messrs. Asher & Co.
Vignaud, Henry, Esq., Ambassade des Etats Unis, 18, Avenue Kleber, Paris.

Warren, W. R., Esq., 81, Fulton-street, New York City, U.S.A.
Washington, Department of State, per Messrs. Stevens & Brown.
Washington, Library of Navy Department, per Messrs. Stevens & Brown.
Watkinson Library, Hartford, Connecticut, U.S.A.
Watson, Commander, R.N.R., Ravella, Crosby, near Liverpool.
Webster, Sir Augustus, Bart., Guards' Club, 70, Pall-mall.
Weld, Rev. Geo. F., Hingham, Mass., U.S.A.
Westaway, Staff Engineer A.E.L., H.M.S. "Flora," S.E. Coast of America.
Westminster School (Rev. G. H. Nall, M.A., Librarian).
Wharton, Rear-Admiral Sir W. J. L., K.C.B., Florys, Princes-road, Wimbledon Park, S.W.
White, Dr. H., c/o W. T. White, Esq., New Hall, Lydd.
Whiteway, R. S., Esq., Brownscombe, Shottermill, Surrey.
Wildy, A.G., Esq., 14, Buckingham-street, W.C.
Williams, O. W., Esq., Fort Stockton, Texas, U.S.A.
Wilmanns, F. M., Esq., 89, Oneida Street, Milwaukee, Wisc., U.S.A.
Wilson, Edward S., Esq., Melton Grange, Brough, East Yorkshire.
Wisconsin State Historical Society, per Messrs. Sotheran & Co., 140, Strand.
Woodford, Chas. M., Esq., Tulagi, Solomon Islands.
Worcester, Massachusetts, Free Library, per Messrs. Kegan Paul.
Wright, John, Esq., 2, Challoner Terrace West, South Shields.
Wyndham, The Right Hon. Geo., M.P., 35, Park Lane, W.

Yale College, U.S.A., per Messrs. Allen & Murray.
Young, Alfales, Esq., Salt Lake City, Utah, U.S.A.
Young, Sir Allen, C.B., 18, Grafton-street, W.
Young & Sons, Messrs. H., 12, South Castle Street, Liverpool.

Zürich, Bibliothèque de la Ville, care of Messrs. Orell, Turli & Co., Zürich; per Mr. D. Nutt.

IMPERIAL
LIBRARY

THE PACIFIC OCEAN

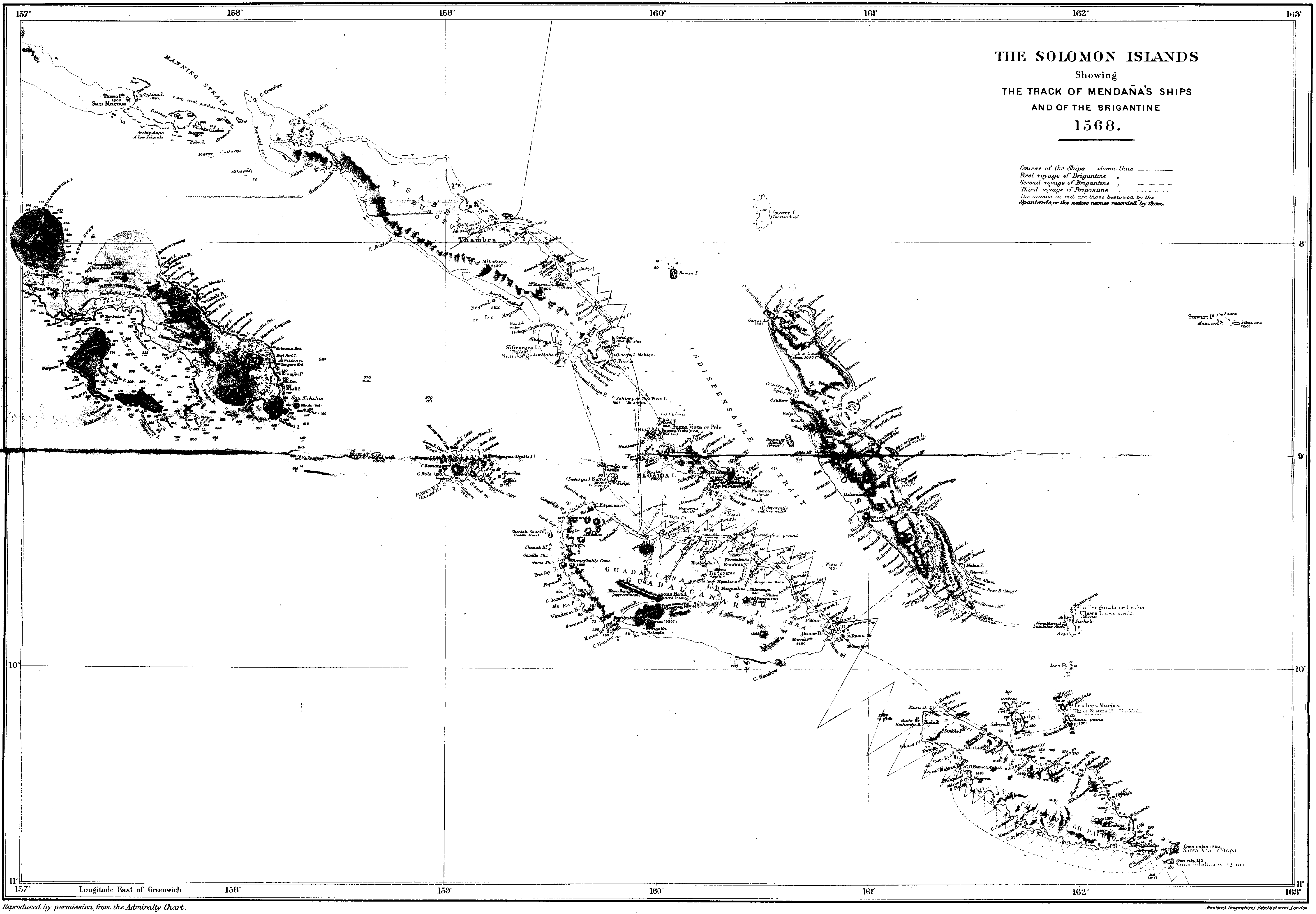
SHOWING THE COURSE FOLLOWED BY MENDAÑA'S SHIPS IN THE DISCOVERY OF THE SOLOMON ISLANDS 1567-1569.

THE NAMES BESTOWED BY THE DISCOVERERS ARE PRINTED IN RED.

NORTH PACIFIC OCEAN
16.Oct. Here the Almiranta parted company
15.Oct.
14.Oct.
18.Oct.
12.Oct.
9.Oct.
7.Oct.
6.Oct.
2.Oct.
30.Sept.
San Francisco
22.Sept.
21.Sept.
8.Sept.
7.Sept.
5.Sept.
3.Sept.
31.Aug.
28.Aug.
27.Aug.
25.Aug.
23.Aug.
21.Jan.
23.Jan.
12.Jan.
11.Jan.
10.Jan.
8.Jan.
6.Jan.
3.Jan.1568
31.Oct.
4.Nov.
6.Nov.
7.Dec.
28.Nov.
9.Dec.
24.Jan.1569
15.June 1569
21.Nov. 1567 Callao
3.Dec.
30.Nov.
JAPAN
JAPAN ISLANDS
MARIANA or LADRONE Is
PAPUA or NEW GUINEA
NEW BRITAIN
CORAL SEA
QUEENSLAND
AUSTRALIA
GULF OF CARPENTARIA
TORRES
SANDWICH ISLANDS
HAWAII
Phoenix Is
Union Group
Ellice Is
Samoa or Navigator Is
FIJI ISLANDS
NEW HEBRIDES
COOK ISLANDS
SOCIETY Is
PAUMOTU or LOW ARCHIPELAGO
MARQUESAS ISLANDS
TUBUAI or AUSTRAL Is
Pitcairn I.
Easter I.
Christmas I.
GALAPAGOS Is
MEXICO
TEXAS
GULF of MEXICO
WEST INDIAN or CARIBBEAN SEA
CUBA
HAITI
CUZCO
Longitude W. of Greenwich
140°
150°
160°
170°
180°
130°
120°
110°
100°
90°
80°
70°
40°
30°
20°
10°
0°

...ced by permission, from the Admiralty Chart.

Stanford's Geographical Establishment, London



THE SOLOMON ISLANDS

Showing

THE TRACK OF MENDAÑA'S SHIPS

AND OF THE BRIGANTINE

1568.

Course of the Ships shown thus
First voyage of Brigantine „
Second voyage of Brigantine „
Third voyage of Brigantine „
The names in red are those bestowed by the Spaniards, or the native names recorded by them.
157°
158°
159°
160°
161°
162°
163°
8°
9°
10°
11°
Longitude East of Greenwich
MANNING STRAIT
Taura Pk. San Marcos
Archipelago of low Islands
C. Comfort
YSABEL
Thambra
Gower I.
Ramos I.
C. Astrolabe
INDISPENSABLE STRAIT
San Nicolas
CHANNEL
Buena Vista
FLORIDA I.
Savo
C. Esperance
Lengo Ch.
GUADALCANAR
GUADALCANAL
C. Hunter
C. Henslow
Nura I.
Lions Head
Danae B.
Gera
Stewart Is.
Sikai ana
Las Tres Marias
Three Sisters Is.
Ugi I.
C. Recherche
Santa Ana or Owa raha
Santa Catalina or Owa riki
St. Georges I.
Ortega Ch.
Russell I.
C. Surville

Reproduced by permission, from the Admiralty Chart.

Stanford's Geographical Establishment, London.